DICTIONARY of JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

B

Uploaded the first time 2016

Latest update: 2026

B.C.E.
JWs avoid the abbreviation B.C. (Before Christ) and use B.C.E. — Before the Common Era.

BA MUZONDA
See: *WATCHMAN HEALING MISSION*

BABBLE / BABBLINGS
A term, commonly used by JWs during Rutherford's time, less often now, denoting the doctrines and reasoning of leaders of other religions:

> The babblings in which religious leaders indulge are vain, and hence lead men away from the path of truth and life. (w1941 7/15 215)

BABYLON
1. A collective and pejorative term for all religious organizations other than JWs. A person who leaves JWs and joins another church is said to have "gone back to Babylon."

2. The capital city of the ancient Babylonian empire and the origin according to JWs of all false religion.

BABYLON
George Storrs taught that the churches of Christendom make up the Biblical "Babylon" (Revelation 18) and everyone who refused to leave the churches would be killed at Jesus' return. Persons who left were not to form new churches since every new church would be part of Babylon the moment it was organized. (Gaustad 1978, pp 168-177)

Russell accepted Storrs' interpretation and equated Babylon with the nominal churches. (Studies I, 238; III, 152; VI, 430; Pastor Russell's Sermons 1917, 408, 411) That is why Russell claimed he was not founding an organization or a new church, because by Storrs' interpretation it would be part of Babylon.

Russell taught that some of "God's people" were in Babylon (Studies IV, 268, 574, 577) but should get out after obtaining "the proper spirit of truth". (wr1893 9/1 1578)

Russell predicted that Babylon's destruction would occur by 1914. (Studies III, 153; Convention Report 1913, 46) He amended 1914 to 1915, and subsequent WTS/JWs leaders put forth 1918, 1922, 1925-1926, 1935-1936, 1942, mid-1970s, "this generation" of 1914, and the 20th century. (See: *DATES*)

In the 1920s Rutherford changed Russell's interpretation of Babylon and redefined Babylon as the "Devil's entire organization" of which religion was only a component.

Regarding Russell's teaching that Babylon is Christendom he wrote:

> It has been said that Babylon pictured 'the church nominal…'
> The Scriptures do not support that conclusion…
> The facts show beyond all doubt that Babylon (Bab-il) is the organization founded by Jehovah's arch-enemy, Satan the Devil…
> The Scriptures show that the Devil's organization is of two parts, to wit, (1) that which is invisible to man… and (2) that part which is visible to man.
> (Prophecy 1929, 130-133)

In 1940 Rutherford again stated that "Satan's organization is generally known as Babylon…" (Religion 1940, 19), but in the same book he apparently revised this interpretation (which in 1929 had been "beyond all doubt") back to Russell's interpretation:

> All the Scriptural evidence shows beyond any doubt that "Christendom", with her demon-control of men, is modern Babylon… (Religion 1940, 79)

On the very next page Rutherford implies that "Babylon" refers to both:

> To all of his people on earth Jehovah by Christ Jesus sends this message: "Come forth, my people, out of her [that is, Babylon, Satan's organization, modern 'Christendom'], that ye have no fellowship with her sins... (p.80)

In the 1950s Franz revised what in 1940 "All the Scriptural evidence shows beyond any doubt" and changed the interpretation of Babylon to mean **all** false religion not just Christendom.

Mainline Christian denominations generally interpret "Babylon the Great" as the city of Rome which in the 5th century suffered "plagues" as described in Revelation 18.

BABYLON DESTROYED
Based on the story of the Tower of Babel JWs believe in a "world empire of false religion". They call this empire "Babylon the Great".

Revelation 17-18 describes a prostitute named "Babylon the great" seated on a "wild beast" which kills the prostitute riding it. Starting in the 1940s JWs taught that the "wild beast" is the United Nations and that the UN would annihilate all religion in the 20th century.

Rutherford previously interpreted the same Bible verses to mean that the League of Nations would destroy "organized Christianity". (Light II 1930, 86, 106-107, 112, 114)

Rutherford's prophecy failed when the League itself went out of existence during WWII.

BABYLON THE GREAT
JWs define "Babylon the Great" as the "world empire of false religion" composed of all other religious organizations and their members.

The phrase "world empire of false religion" appears on *Watchtower Library* (2007) CD 680 times commencing in 1963.

"Babylonish" describes the doctrines and practices of other religions.

BABYLONIAN CAPTIVITY
The exile or captivity of the Jews in Babylon which JWs claim started in 607 BCE and lasted 70 years.

JWs also refer to the imprisonment of Rutherford and seven associates in 1918-1919 as a modern "Babylonian captivity" and regard this as a parallel or second fulfilment. (The Truth Shall Make You Free 1943, 311; Babylon The Great Has Fallen 1963, 606, 664)

The phrase "Babylonian captivity" is also used of the spiritual malaise of the Russellites in 1914-1918. (Yearbook 1975, 109)

JWs leaders claim: "…never again would they fall into bondage to any part of Satan's world empire of false religion." (w1983 12/1 1)

What this meant is obscure. It can not mean no more imprisonments since tens of thousands of JWs have been imprisoned. Nor can it mean no more theological errors since hundreds more errors were published since 1919 including many major doctrines revised or even discarded entirely. Possibly it meant there will not be another roundup and imprisonment of the WBTS directors (who from 1944 to 2000 were the same as the Governing Body).

Recently the "Babylonian captivity" has been revised again and now refers to alleged apostasy in Christianity in the 2nd century C.E.

BABYLONISH BONDAGE
This is the same as "Babylonian captivity". The phrase refers to Rutherford's imprisonment in 1918-1919. (w1984 5/15 17; Then Is Finished The Mystery of God 1969, 239)

BABYLONISH CAPTORS
Usually a reference to Christendom and Rutherford's imprisonment in 1918. (Qualified To Be Ministers 1955, 316)

BABYLON'S FALL (Revelation 18:2)
Interpreted by Russell as God's rejection of Christendom in 1878.

Russell had predicted the physical ascent of the "saints" to heaven in 1878. By the time this prediction failed his cult was openly rejected by mainstream churches. Russell retaliated by announcing that 1878 was the year God rejected Christendom and declared this supposed rejection by God to be "Babylon's fall". (Studies III, 152, 156, 180; wr1893 9/1 1577)

Babylon's "fall" was therefore different to the destruction of the churches which Russell predicted for 1914.

Rutherford regarded the "fall of Babylon" to be Christendom's destruction at Armageddon. (Light II 1930, 120) That is, the "fall" and the destruction are the same.

In 1963 F.W. Franz restored Russell's distinction between "fall" and destruction and made them again separate events and put Babylon's fall in 1919 when Rutherford and other WTS leaders were released from prison. Their release from prison became "Babylon's fall". (Babylon the Great has Fallen 1963, 500, 505, 530-531, 606, 694)

In 1980 *The Watchtower* apparently equated the "fall" of Babylon with the destruction of religion by the United Nations at the start of Armageddon (w1980 7/1 17) — a return to the 1930s interpretation.

BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN! GOD'S KINGDOM RULES! (1963)



A book which gives the interpretation of Governing Body member Frederick Franz of Revelation 14-21 including parallels between ancient Babylon and modern Babylon which is defined as:

> … the entire world empire of religion, which includes all religions that have as their base the religious teachings and practices of ancient Babylon. (pp 304, 499)

Franz's interpretation of Revelation 14 to 21 puts JWs at the centre of modern history, as the only true religion which is tasked with:

- Gathering all who will survive Armageddon into the JWs Organization,
- Inflicting God's "seven last plagues" on the world, and
- Broadcasting the final "…unusually great proclamation of God's vengeance" just prior to Christendom's annihilation and Armageddon. (pp 304, 499)

Babylon, according to the book, "fell" in 1919 when Rutherford and seven followers were released from prison. (See: *BABYLON'S FALL*)

BACKCALL

An obsolete term which referred to calling back on a householder who showed interest; changed in 1972-1973 to "return visit".

As a noun "back-call" or "return visit" is a householder who has shown enough interest in the JWs message for the publisher to call on him again. The verb to "call back" refers to returning to a householder previously visited.

Back-calls were commenced around 1937 because calling back on people who bought books was more effective at making converts than book-selling alone.

BACKCALL FOLLOW UP REPORT

A form used in the 1950s to record the response of householders visited more than once, the publications they accepted, and the interest the householder is showing.

BAD ASSOCIATION

Non-JWs, as well as ex-JWs and JWs who show independence by not fully conforming to Governing Body instructions, are all "bad associations".

BAD ATTITUDE

A JW who displays lack of appreciation, or makes an inappropriate facial expression, or is slow to obey authority figures higher in the JWs hierarchy may be accused of having a "bad attitude".

In spoken language "bad attitude" may be abbreviated to "B.A." which is sometimes used as a pun on Bachelor of Arts to belittle a JW who attends university instead of using the time to go door to door. For example: "Hello brother, how is your B.A. progressing?" (See: *EDUCATION*)

BAHAMAS

Publishers and Memorial attendance on the Bahamas islands and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	411	411		
1975	524	382		
1980	536	438	1,661	141
1985	753	278	2,354	89
1990	1,213	173	3,287	64
1995	1,389	183	3,677	69
2000	1,456	175	3,451	74
2005	1,607	190	3,533	86
2010	1,806	192	4,414	79
2015	1,686	230	4,198	92
2018	1,762	226	4,237	94
	Ave.			
2019	1,695	229	4,977	78
2020	1,692	232	3,426	115
2021	1,746	227	5,439	73
2022	1,737	231	4,351	92
2023	1,690	239	4,489	90
2024	1,643	253	4,361	95
2025	1647	245	4,191	96

Until 2018 the ratio of publishers to population was based on the yearly "peak", but after 2018 on the monthly "average".

BALE, C.C.P. (1974-)
Christian Charles Philip Bale is an actor who played Moses in *Exodus: Gods and Kings* (2014), Batman in *Batman Begins* (2005), *The Dark Knight* (2008) and *The Dark Knight Rises* (2012); the serial killer in *American Psycho* (2000); and Dicky Eklund in *The Fighter* (2010), besides starring in other movies.

Bale was born in Wales and has three sisters. He was raised as a JW but discontinued at age 17 when his parents divorced and he moved with his father to California.

BALKO, PRINCESS and PRINCE
Princess Bonnie C. Balko (b.1929) and Prince Joseph Barak Balko (b.1931) were children of the live-in caretaker couple at the WTS's Beth Sarim mansion or "House of Princes" located in San Diego, California.

The parents were August H. Balko (1887-1973?) born in Texas and Blanch P. Balko (1905-?) born in Missouri, married c.1922 in Texas.


THE MESSENGER

CONVENTION REPORT

WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY

Thrilling Address by Society's President Y

"Remnant to the Front" | Another Surprise

Princess Balko, *The Messenger*, July 29, 1931

Princess Bonnie was photographed with Rutherford for the front page of *The Messenger* of July 29, 1931. A further article the next day explained:

> Beth Sarim being the "House of Princes," and, as we confidently expect, to be occupied and used by some of the princes in the earth, it seemed quite appropriate that these children who were growing up there should be named in harmony with these scriptures. Hence the little girl is named Princess Bonnie Balko, and the little boy Prince Joseph Barak Balko. We know from the scriptures that both Joseph and Barak will be among the princes, and since there are some women also mentioned among these faithful ones it is hoped that these two little ones may grow up at Beth-Sarim to be with the rulers of the earth and live forever to the glory of Jehovah's name. They have been told, in so far as they can understand, that they may expect these noble men and, when they do appear, to meet them and put themselves completely under their direction. It might be that this little prince and princess would be stenographers or office children or clerks about the place, or perform some other duty that will be necessary in the Kingdom. (July 30, 1931, p.2)

The suggestion that Princess and Prince might be "office **children**" for the resurrected Old Testament men, implying the resurrection of those men would take place before the two infants became adults, was not a misprint. Rutherford and Van Amburgh had both suggested that the predictions made in *Millions Now Living Will Never Die* (1920) for 1925 could delay by ten years. JWs therefore looked to the mid 1930s, when the two infants would still be "children".

Beth Sarim was sold when Princess and Prince were about 19 and 17 years old. They never did meet the resurrected "rulers of the earth" or become office "children" for them at Beth Sarim. They also never acquired prominence among JWs, neither did the parents, since the name "Balko" does not appear on *Watchtower Library* (2007) CD or in the *Proclaimers* (1993) book or *Watch Tower Publication Index 1930-1985*.

BALL, ROSE (1869-1950)
Rose Ball was the so-called "foster daughter" of Charles and Maria Russell and lived with them from 1888-1897.

Rose became wife to Ernest C. Henninges, a fellow worker at Bible House, and moved with him to Australia to manage Russell's Branch Office in Melbourne in 1903.

The Henninges couple along with most of Melbourne's Russellites left Russell's cult in 1908/1909. Russell appointed a new branch manager, R. Nicholson, to replace Henninges.

They founded the magazine *The New Covenant Advocate* and a Bible-student group named the New Covenant Fellowship which advertised its message widely until the 1950s. The current membership is under 100. They publish a paper called *The New Covenant News*.

The *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* (October 29, 1911) reported on Mrs Russell's suit for separation where Mrs Maria Russell testified about Rose Ball:

Pittsburgh, October 27 — The suit for a separation brought by Martha (sic) F. Russell against Charles Taze Russell, her husband, popularly known as Pastor Russell, who has just entered a libel suit against The Brooklyn Eagle, is remembered here as one of the most sensational court proceedings in the history of Allegheny County.

Pastor Russell's Advertising methods had already attracted a good deal of attention to himself, and while many referred to him as "the crank preacher of Allegheny," his unusual lectures and effective publicity methods drew good-sized crowds to his Bible House on Arch Street.

When the fact that Pastor Russell's wife was suing him for a separation became public much general interest was aroused and the courtroom was thronged during the proceedings.

The testimony which elicited the most comment concerned the relations of Pastor Russell with Rose Ball, a young woman stenographer employed by Pastor Russell in the Bible House on Arch Street. This testimony was given by Mrs. Russell on direct examination on Thursday, April 26, 1906. It was ruled out by the court on the ground that the incidents to which reference was made were said to have occurred on a date which precedes the dates mentioned in Mrs. Russell's bill of complaint. Pastor Russell recurred to the incidents when he went on the stand several days later, and gave his version of what had happened. Rose Ball was not called to the stand, as she left for Australia shortly before the case came to trial.

The verbatim record of this testimony taken from the official report of the case on file in the office of the Prothonotary of Allegheny County is as follows:

Q. I want you to tell us what your husband did in company with this woman Rose, in your presence and in your home.
A. In the first place I considered it— (objected to and witness was not permitted to finish.)

Q. Tell us what you saw and what he said was done.
A. One evening he spent the evening downstairs and our library and bedroom were next to each other upstairs on the second floor, and I spent the evening downstairs reading, and I went upstairs about 10 o'clock to my room, and I supposed that: he was either in the library or had retired, and when I went up there I found that he was in neither place, and I stepped out in the hall, and I found that he was in his night robe, sitting beside Miss Ball's bed and she was in bed. On other occasions I found him going in there and I found she called him in and said she wasn't well and wanted him in, and I objected to this, and I said that it was highly improper, and I said: "We have people about the house, and what kind of a name will be attached in this house if you do that sort of thing?" and he got angry.

Pastor's Wife Tells of His Alleged Nightly Visits

Q. You state that you found him doing this at other times. How often after that?
A. I found him a number of times; I don't remember how often.

Q. In her room?
A. Yes, sir. And I found him in the servant girl's room as well. And I found him locked in the servant girl's room.

Q. Did he make any explanation why he was in the girl's room?
A. No. He did not; he just got angry.

Q. What did you say to him about this conduct and what did he say.
A. I said to him, "We have a great work on our hands," and I said, "In this work you and I have to walk very circumspectly before the world and if you are going to do things like this, what will happen? Suppose you are all right, don't you suppose people will talk about things like this?" and I said, "I am not satisfied with it," and he said he wasn't going to be ruled by me. But I felt distressed about that.

Q. What did Rose do at the Watch Tower.
A. She attended to the correspondence.

Q. Where was her desk with reference to the desk of Mr. Russell of the Watch Tower Society?
A. It wasn't near his; it was in the office.

Q. When would he go to the Watch Tower, in the morning?
A. I don't remember; he generally went down alone.

Q. Who would return with him?
A. She came with him in the evening and they came about 11 o'clock and the young men that were in the office—she was the only girl, and the young men would go home, and he wouldn't allow her to go home with them, and she must wait and always go with him.
(Objected to.)
Q. I want the mere fact, did this girl Rose go home with your husband?
A. Yes, Sir.

Q. What year was that?
A. In the fall of 1894. (By Mr. Porter, attorney for the plaintiff)

Q. Did you state to your husband at this meeting any endearing terms?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What were they?
A. I said "She tells me that one evening you came home—" I asked her when did these things occur. I said to him, "She says they occurred down at the office when she stayed down there with him in the evening after the rest had gone, and at home at any time when I wasn't around."

Q. Now, about the endearing terms?
A. She said one evening when she came home with him, just as she got inside the hall, it was late in the evening, about 11 o'clock, he put his arms around her and kissed her. This was in the vestibule before they entered the hall, and he called her his little wife, but she said "I am not your wife." and he said "I will call you daughter, and a daughter has nearly all the privileges of a wife."

Q. What other terms were used?
A. Then he said, "I am like a jellyfish. I float around here and there. I touch this one and that one, and if she responds I take her to me, and if not, I float on to others"; and she wrote that out so that I could remember it for sure when I would speak to him about it. And he confessed that he said those things.

Q. And the young men came home ahead of them?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. State to the court and jury what talk, if any, you had with this girl Rose, in regard to her relations with your husband, which you communicated to your husband?
This question was objected to and it was changed to read as follows: Q. You are to tell what you stated to your husband that Rose had said and his reply to you.

Mrs. Russell Says Girl Told Her of Pastor's Caresses.

A. I told him that I had learned something that was very serious and I didn't tell him right away. I let a day elapse until I felt I had control of myself and could talk and then I told him that I had something very serious to tell him about this matter, and he said, "What is it?" and I said, "Rose has told me that you have been intimate with her, that you have been in the habit of hugging and kissing her and having her sit on your knee and fondling each other, and she tells me you bid her under no account to tell me, but she couldn't keep it any longer. She said if I was distressed about it she felt that she would have to come and make a confession to me, and she has done that.

Q. What did he say?
A. He tried to make light of it at first and I said, "Husband, you can't do that. I know the whole thing. She has told me straight and I know it to be true." Well, he said he was sorry; it was true, but he was sorry. He said he didn't mean any harm. I said, "I don't see how you could do an act like that without meaning harm."

The *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* report is accurate and can be checked against the *Court Trial Transcript of CT Russell & Maria Russell*.

Rose Ball's age — 10 years, 13 or 25?

WTS publications portray Rose Ball as about 10 to 13 years old when the Russells took her in and she sat on the Pastor's lap. Russell's account in w1906 of statements made in court says:

> Mrs. Russell charged an improper intimacy between her husband and "Rose," who became a member of the Russell household in 1888…

> Mrs. Russell and her attorney disclaimed any charge of criminal intimacy, but meant that "Rose" had sat on Mr. Russell's knee and he had kissed her. Mrs. Russell also swore that one night she entered "Rose's" room and found Mr. Russell sitting near her bed and holding her hand…
>
> The next day Mr. Russell on the witness stand explained that "Rose" and her brother "Charles" were members of the family and office assistants—the former at Mrs. Russell's request. "Rose" was quite childish in appearance, wore short dresses, and looked to Mr Russell to be about 13 years old. He did not know her age, but another who knew her guessed that she was then only 10 years old. She may have been older than 13 in 1888… (wr1906 7/15 3815)

Thus Russell claimed he did not know Rose's age but she looked "childish", wore short dresses and seemed to Mrs Russell about 13 and someone else had "guessed" she was 10.

Page 3815 also says that Mrs Russell had worked Rose too hard prior to Rose going to the "office", Charles had expressed sympathy, and Rose kissed him. After that:

> …it was mutually agreed that "Rose" thereafter should be considered and treated as an adopted daughter. "Rose" was so informed … and invited to spend her evenings in the large study and reading room with the Russells. This course was followed; and when "Rose" retired, usually at 9 p.m., Mrs. Russell kissed her good-night and told her to "pass the kiss along" to Mr. R. also. This custom continued several years… (ibid)

Rose Ball and her husband (E.C. Henninges) are buried in a Melbourne cemetery where her gravesite says she was **buried in November 1950, aged 81** — therefore born in 1869. Her Australian Certificate of Registration gives her birth-date 19/3/1869. Maria Russell, in the Russell vs Russell transcript, states that Rose, "was about 19 or 20 when she came to us…" (p.67)

The *Extra Edition of Zion's Watch Tower* for April 25, 1894 titled *A Conspiracy Exposed* lists Rose Ball among the seven directors of the WBTS! (p.56) This alone proves she wasn't a child and that Russell knew it!

Rose Ball was aged 19 when she began to live with the Russells and regularly kissed the "pastor". In 1894 when "late in the evening … he put his arms around her and kissed her … and he called her his little wife" she was **25** and he 42!

C.T. Russell supposedly mistook a 19-25 year-old woman who lived in his house for years, worked with him, and whom he appointed as a director of the WBTS, to be a child!

The Commonwealth Law Reports (1917 report an action in Melbourne's High Court brought by Rose Ball Henninges against the Victorian Railways Commissioners to recover damages. Mrs Ball was in a train carriage when shunting had allegedly caused her to fall. The Court found she had exaggerated her injury due to her prior "neurasthenia" i.e. emotional problems.

Rose and her husband wrote a number of books interpreting the Bible. When he died in 1939 Rose edited the *New Covenant Advocate*.

(See also: *HENNINGES*)

BALZERAIT, P.

The WTS branch servant in Germany in the 1930s. In 1932 he wrote:

> The Magdeburg company of Jehovah's witnesses looks back with thankfulness to so many blessings which Jehovah gave us in the last months. The climax of these favors, we feel, is the new name, 'Jehovah's witnesses,' adopted with enthusiasm by the single members of the company. In order to manifest the unity of the Lord's people in like manner as did our brethren and cowitnesses of Jehovah all over the earth, we as a body of Jehovah's witnesses in this town on this evening gladly expressed our acceptance of the new name by publicly shouting 'Yes', and we are convinced this will again spur on everybody to live up to this name. We recognize our commission to be Jehovah's witnesses, and hereby wish to say that we regard this to be our greatest privilege. This new name will always remind us thereof and spur us to continued faithfulness toward Jehovah and his kingdom.
>
> The wording of this resolution has been sent from this office to all the companies in Germany, which at the same time were informed that the Magdeburg Company passed this resolution. Thereupon, until now, 509 companies of Germany, representing 17,000 friends, have written us that they have passed the same resolution.
>
> I am glad to report this to you in the

name of these companies and of these friends.

Your humble brother and coworker by God's grace,
P. Balzerait. (w1932 4/1 111)

About five years later Balzerait defected.

BAN IN AUSTRALIA

In 1941 Australia's Menzies government banned JWs, the only Christian sect banned in Australia in the 20th century.

Jayne Persian (2008) in "'A National Nuisance': The Banning of Jehovah's Witnesses in 1941" examined files from the Attorney-General's Department and concluded:

> ...a primary reason that Jehovah's Witnesses were banned during the Second World War was because they were 'out of step with the war effort'. This confirms the argument of Kay Saunders and Roger Daniels that 'crises like war, whether civil or external, produce repression in specific instances in even the most liberal nation'.
>
> The pressure from sectors of the community against the politically neutral Witnesses led Menzies to ban them in a show of leadership strength, with the secondary benefit of scoring political points, particularly over Hughes. Official investigations into the four radio stations owned by the Witnesses provided an excuse for the banning of the sect, and conversely the banning of the sect provided a reason for the banning of the radio stations. No one concerned with the radio stations was ever charged. The minor infringements of the radio stations, particularly Radio 5KA, provided an excuse to get rid of the sect.

The JWs' legal appeal was decided in the High Court in 1943, based on Section 116 of the Australian Constitution, which protects religious freedom. Legal commentator William Kaplan has noted:

> What the … [ban] demonstrates is that, in wartime, basic rights, whether written down or not, like freedom of religion, will take second place to the security of the state.

Background to the ban

In the 1930s-1940s JWs aggressively criticized big business, politics and religion and opposed military service. As a result JWs and/or their publications were banned during WWII in about 40 countries. Thousands of JWs were imprisoned as conscientious objectors, thousands were subject to mob violence (although this was also due to their aggressive proselytizing methods at the time), and in Germany hundreds executed.

In September 1939 with Australia at war with Germany *The National Security Act* was passed. Australia's 2500 JWs became subjects of surveillance by the Army, Navy, Military Intelligence, and the Commonwealth Investigation Branch (CBI).

Attorney-General William Morris Hughes defended the rights of JWs under Section 116 of the Constitution:

> The Commonwealth shall not make any laws for establishing any religion or for imposing any religious observance, or for prohibiting the free exercise of any religion, and no religious test shall be required as a qualification for any office or public trust under the Commonwealth.

In April 1940 Archbishop Mannix of Melbourne received a copy of the JWs magazine *Consolation* which implied he and the Catholic Church had connections to organized crime, and he sent it to the CBI:

> The Roman Hierarchy is the direct cause of most of the poverty and crime in the world. Its teachings are not uplifting in spite of its boastings as proved by the large percentage of criminals from the drunk and the disorderly to a hanging matter who are of the Roman faith. What price Al Capone, 'Legs' Diamond, Dr Mannix … and scores of others? Right down the ages a rogues' gallery could have been established from the wicked and depraved children of the Hierarchy. (g1940 4/3 21)

Across Australia newspapers reported on JWs, especially their "national nuisance" and divisive features. For example, the *Inverell Times* (NSW) (October 7, 1940, p.5) reported:

> JEHOVAH WITNESS
> Charge of Disloyalty
> A young German, naturalised in 1935, and described as head of the Jehovah Witness organisation in Tasmania, was remanded at the Hobart Court on a charge under the National Security Regulations.
> He was Cyril Domeney McVilly.
> The complaint alleged that at Crabtree on September 8, McVilly endeavoured to orally influence public opinion in a

manner likely to be prejudicial to the efficient prosecution of the war by looking at a portrait of the King and saying: 'Take that photo down; he is no good. Do not worship him. Do not put trust in him. It would not be good for you. Religion is no good, and the Salvation Army is the worst of them all. The British nation will be defeated in the war, and Hitler and Mussolini will rule the world.'

The *Examiner* (Launceston, Tasmania) November 7, 1940, p.1 reported the outcome:

"IN NATURE OF WARNING"
Fine for Jehovah's Witness

Convicted last week on a charge of having, on September 8, 1940, at Crabtree, published seditious words concerning his Majesty the King, Redvers Cyril Domeny McVilly, a Jehovah's Witness, was fined £10, and ordered to pay £9/3/6 costs by Colonel J. P. Clark, P.M., in the Hobart Police Court yesterday.

It was alleged in evidence given previously that McVilly had said that religion was no good and that the Salvation Army was the worst of them all, because it only fed soldiers to go and commit murder. Referring to a picture of the King, he had said: "Don't put your trust in him." He stated further, it was alleged, that Britain would be defeated and that. Hitler and Mussolini would rule the world.

Before the Police Magistrate gave his decision Mr. H. S. Baker, for defendant, stated that he thought the authorities were more concerned with establishing a principle that this should not go on than with making martyrs of persons who had this particular religious belief.

"At a time like this," said Colonel Clark, addressing the defendant, "when the Empire is facing the greatest crisis in the history of the nation, there is no room within the nation's boundaries for disloyal persons or persons who commit offences such as you have by uttering disloyal or seditious words. You made these in accordance with a misguided belief you hold. The penalty I am about to impose is more in the nature of a warning," he added.

The prediction that the Nazis would conquer the world came from Rutherford's booklet *Face The Facts* (1938) and other WBTS publications.

It should be noted that if a JW challenged even one doctrine or interpretation of Rutherford, let alone uttering tirades of the above sort, he was excommunicated, ousted from the sect and shunned. Thus any police and court actions against JWs in Australia were mild compared to the emotional trauma JWs readily inflicted on each other.

Complaints by politicians, the public and religious leaders all over Australia helped sway the Cabinet to ban JWs.

On October 14, 1940, a crowd of JWs demonstrated outside the home of the Attorney-General. Two days later the *Sydney Morning Herald* reported the Premier of New South Wales, Alexander Mair, as saying:

> The organization known as Jehovah's Witnesses was definitely disloyal to the interests of Australia, was anti-British, and was a disruptive element to the community… (October 16, 1940)

The *Northern Star* (Lismore, NSW) reported:

> Premier's Attack on Jehovah's Witnesses
> If the Commonwealth Government does not declare Jehovah's Witnesses an illegal body the N.S.W. Government will probably take steps to ban the organization from New South Wales.
> This was indicated by the Premier (Mr. Mail) in the Legislative Assembly today... (October 16, 1940, p.1)

> Urge Jehovah's Witnesses Be Banned
> The deputy-premier (Mr. Bruxner) and the chief Secretary (Mr. Tonking) today urged the Jehovah Witness movement should be banned... (November 2, 1940, p.5)

In December 1940 radio station 5KA Adelaide, owned by JWs, came under suspicion with allegations that 5KA had broadcast 'indirect references' to the departure of a troop ship.

Although no direct charges were made the transmissions of all four JWs radio stations in Australia were suspended on 8 January 1941 by the Postmaster-General's Department.

After negotiations JWs agreed to forward all script for censoring, have no extempore broadcasts, and pay for security monitoring. Hughes publicly announced that the radio stations were allowed back on air and this was published in newspapers on 17 January 1941.

Published also on January 17 was the news that the government had on the previous day banned JWs. What happened is that Menzies had vetoed the agreement with JWs and the stations remained off air.

The ban

In December 1940 Percy C. Spender, Minister for the Army, had requested a Cabinet meeting to decide upon a ban of JWs and enclosed a military intelligence report recommending the banning. On January 13 Chief of Naval Staff, Admiral Royle, asked Menzies to approve the cancellation of the four stations' broadcasting licences.

The difficulty, however, was that conclusive evidence to justify prosecution of JWs under the National Security Regulations was not available.

The issue was discussed at a Cabinet meeting on 17 January 1941 in Sydney which Hughes could not attend as he was in Canberra. Persian writes:

> Menzies refused to shift the location of the meeting and may well have wanted Hughes out of the way. He knew that Hughes was bound to protest the legality of any ban against the Witnesses. In his capacity as Attorney-General, Hughes had repeatedly pointed out Section 116 of the Constitution as a stumbling block to banning the Witnesses...
>
> When the decision had been reached, Menzies sent a telegram to Hughes advising him that Cabinet had decided that Jehovah's Witnesses should be declared an illegal organization and that 'no (repeat no) permission' should be granted to reopen the radio stations...

Persian offers the suggestion:

> It seems possible that Menzies was manipulating Cabinet proceedings in order to assert his leadership as Prime Minister over Cabinet. Menzies had become Prime Minister after the sudden death of Joseph Lyons in April 1939, and he inherited a faction-ridden government. His hold on the Prime Ministership was not strong and Hughes was a rival...

However, rather than Cabinet being manipulated, it's more likely that <u>the entire JWs situation occurring as it did during wartime</u> is what provoked the ban. The American Consul General, Erle Dickover explained that, "their pacifism, civil disobedience and defeatism were carried to such lengths as to constitute a potential danger to the state".

Therefore, probably, public anger over the anti-religion propaganda in WTS publications, the "nuisance" and disruptive nature of JWs activities, their prediction of Nazi victory, and the suspicious radio broadcasts, **together** forced Menzies to ban the sect under the National Security (Subversive Associations) Regulations.

The ban meant that JWs were not permitted to meet for study and worship, or print, circulate or possess WTS literature. Their headquarters in Sydney and kingdom halls in Adelaide and Perth were confiscated, under the National Security Regulations.

With the ban announced Hughes changed tack and supported it:

> Sects Warned of Penalties
> Charging Jehovah's Witnesses with going from door to door, advocating disloyalty, and spreading disaffection, the Attorney-General (Mr. Hughes) warned today that the banning of their organization would mean very severe penalties for anyone broadcasting their doctrines or distributing their literature...
> (The Scone Advocate, January 21, 1941, p.3)

Two years later, in a judgment by the High Court on June 14, 1943, JWs won their appeal against the Commonwealth based on Section 116 of the Constitution which provides for the free exercise of religion, and their confiscated property was restored.

(See also: *RADIO STATION 5KA*)

BANGLADESH

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bangladesh and their ratio to population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Mem -orial	Ratio 1 to
1975	4	19,500,000		
1980	12	7,500,000	27	3,333,000
1985	19	5,263,000	86	1,160,000
1990	37	3,071,000	122	932,000
1995	48	2,597,000	182	685,000
2000	97	1,309,000	234	543,000
2005	110	1,312,000	270	535,000
2010	136	1,147,000	499	313,000
2015	255	631,000	993	162,000
2018	303	549,000	839	198,000
	Ave.			
2019	315	518,000	980	166,000
2020	325	507,000	750	220,000
2021	328	507,000	1,210	137,000
2022	334	510,000	1,048	162,000
2023	338	509,000	1,189	145,000
2024	371	471,000	1,116	157,000
2025	422	416,000	1,290	136,000

BANS

The following is a partial list of bans upon the WTS and/or its publications. The asterisk indicates bans limited to publications. (See also: *PERSECUTION*)

1918 February	Canada
1933 April 4	Bavaria
1933	Germany
1934 April 1	Throughout Germany
1934 July	Latvia
1936-1937	Figi*
1936	Austria*
1936	Danzig
1936 Dec. 18	S. Rhodesia*
1936 -1945	Trinidad
1937	Poland*
1937 April 21	Rumania
1938 June	Korea & Japan
1939	Czechoslovakia
1939/10-1947/1	France
1940 March 3	Belgium*
1940 March	Leeward Islands
1940/7-1943/10	Canada
1940-1945	New Zealand*
1941-1943	Australia
1941 July 8	Norway
1941/10-1946	Jamaica*
1942	Britain*
1942	40 bans operating
1948	Czechoslovakia
1949	Argentina
1950/6-1956/8	Dominican Republic
1952 Dec.	France*
1956/3-1974/12	Solomon Islands
1957 April	Turkey
1957	Ethiopia
1957-1960/3	Jordan
1957 July 24	Dominican Republic
1960	Egypt
1960-1975	New Caledonia*
1964	Tanzania
1964 Oct. 27	Jordan
1965/3-1967/6	Ivory Coast
1966	Zaire
1967	Malawi
1970 August 10	Madagascar
1973 April	Kenya
1973	Uganda
1976 April	Benin
1976 August	Afghanistan
1976/8-1979/9	Central Afr. Rep.
1976 Dec. 23	Indonesia
1977 January	Congo
1977 February	46 bans operating
1977 March 2	Burundi
1978 March 14	Angola
1979/9-1980	Central Afr. Rep.
1980 July 24	Iran

In 1939/1940 Rutherford interpreted the closure of WTS branches in Europe as proof that the JWs preaching/denouncing work was ending and Armageddon was about to strike. (See also: *PERSECUTION*)

w1967 2/15 104 says that during WWII JWs "were banned in thirty four lands."

In 1978:

> There are more than 40 countries where an official ban or other restrictions have been imposed on the Christian worship and activity of Jehovah's Witnesses. (Yearbook 1979, 14)

BAPTISM IN WATER

JWs baptize new converts by immersion in water usually at conventions

Baptism is viewed as a public demonstration of having privately dedicated or consecrated oneself to serve Jehovah under the direction of the "faithful slave class" and the Watch tower organization.

Dedication was supposed to be to God, not to the religion or Organization or a man:

> We do not dedicate ourselves to a religion, nor to a man, nor to an organization. No, we dedicated ourselves to the Supreme Sovereign of the Universe, our Creator, Jehovah God himself. (w1966 10/1 603-604)

In practice JWs have always had to follow their leaders — Russell, Rutherford, WBTS, Governing Body — irrespective of what the Bible teaches. Throughout several thousand revisions in doctrine and interpretation anyone who did not follow the leaders was not long tolerated.

Baptism follows the dedication of one's life to God. Russell considered baptism necessary for every member of the Body of Christ i.e. the 144,000. (Studies VI, 445-452)

Russell introduced mass baptisms at conventions to promote the impression of rapid growth. In Chicago, 1893, 70 were baptized aged 17 to 70; in Indianapolis, 1899, 42 were baptized aged 25-70; in Cleveland, 1901, 66 aged 22-70. The largest mass baptism conducted by JWs was over 7000 in New York in 1958.

Baptism Questions

In the 1970s baptism candidates received prior notice of the following wording of the

two questions to which they had to answer "Yes":

1. Have you repented of your sins and turned around, recognizing yourself before Jehovah God as a condemned sinner who needs salvation, and have you acknowledged that this salvation proceeds from him, the Father through his son Jesus Christ?

2. On the basis of this faith … have you dedicated yourself unreservedly to God to do his will henceforth as he reveals it to you through Jesus Christ and through the Bible under the enlightening power of the holy spirit? (w1973 5/1 280)

New wording came in 1985 and JWs were baptized "in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the spirit-directed organization". (w1985 6/1 30) This new formula was probably a Governing Body reaction to their decreased credibility and loss of followers after 1975.

BAPTISM OF RUSSELL and the "SLAVE CLASS"

C.T. Russell got rebaptised in 1874. His sister Margaret Russell Land addressed the crowd at the 1907 Bible Students Convention and said:

> About 1874 the true mode of Baptism and its import was discerned by him, and he and father, together with a number of others, including myself, symbolized our baptism into Christ by water immersion. (Souvenir Notes From Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society's Conventions Part II 1907, p.25)

Who baptized Russell is not stated. However, since Russell at the time associated with preachers of the Advent Christian Church and the Life and Advent Union, such as George Storrs, George Stetson and Jonas Wendell, one of these men could have baptized Russell.

If so, it links JWs and their so-called "faithful and discreet slave class" to the Advent Christian Church.

In other words, if we take 20th century JWs' teaching seriously — that the "slave class" existed throughout the centuries — it follows that when the first JWs or Russellites defected from the Advent Christian Church they defected from the "faithful and discreet slave" class, and later gave that title to themselves!

Ironically in the early 21st century the JWs Governing Body, did something similar — they dismissed the "faithful and discreet slave", thousands of individuals, and reserved that title for themselves.

(See: *FAITHFUL AND DISCREET SLAVE*)

BAPTISM QUESTIONS REVISED

Baptism candidates are asked two questions that require a "yes" prior to getting immersed.

In 1966 the wording was:

> (1) Have you recognized yourself before Jehovah God as a sinner who needs salvation, and have you acknowledged to him that this salvation proceeds from him, the Father, through his Son Jesus Christ?
>
> (2) On the basis of this faith in God and in his provision for salvation, have you dedicated yourself unreservedly to God to do his will henceforth as he reveals it to you through Jesus Christ and through the Bible under the enlightening power of the holy spirit? (w1966 8/1 465)

In 1979 the wording was still similar:

> (1) Have you recognized yourself as a sinner and needing salvation from Jehovah God? And have you acknowledged that this salvation proceeds from him and through his ransomer, Christ Jesus?
>
> (2) On the basis of this faith in God and in his provision for redemption have you dedicated yourself unreservedly to Jehovah God to do his will henceforth as that will is revealed to you through Christ Jesus and through God's Word as his holy spirit makes plain? (w1970 5/15 309)

In practice the "enlightening power of the holy spirit" and "do his will" is really the "enlightening power of the organization" and "the Governing Body's will" since anyone disagreeing with the Organization, even if it's because of their false prophecies, is excommunicated irrespective of what the Bible says.

In the great falling away after 1976 ex-JWs could, if they wanted to, justify their departure by quoting the baptism questions, as well as comments like this one: "We do not dedicate ourselves to a religion, nor to a man, nor to an organization. No, we dedicated ourselves to the Supreme Sovereign of the Universe…" (w1966 10/1 603)

Ex JWs argued that the Organization's demands conflicted with the commitment that they had made at their baptism — their commitment had been to God, not to the Organization.

The Governing Body therefore, in 1985, again revised the wording of the baptism questions:

> (1) On the basis of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, have you repented of your sins and dedicated yourself to Jehovah to do his will?
>
> (2) Do you understand that your dedication and baptism identify you as one of Jehovah's Witnesses in association with God's spirit directed organization? (w1985 6/1 30)

The problem, however, remains that someone baptized might study JWs history and conclude that the numerous failed predictions prove it is not "God's spirit directed organization".

BAPTISM STATISTICS

The JWs baptism statistics are here rounded out to the nearest 1000:

1955	64,000	2009	276,000
1960	69,000	2010	
1965	64,000	2011	263,000
1970	164,000	2012	269,000
1975	295,000	2013	277,000
1978	95,000	2014	276,000
1980	114,000	2015	260,000
1985	190,000	2016	265,000
1990	302,000	2017	284,000
1995	338,000	2018	282,000
2000	289,000	2019	304,000
2003	259,000	2020	242,000
2004		2021	171,000
2005	248,000	2022	146,000
2006	248,000	2023	270,000
2007	298,000	2024	296,000
2008	290,000	2025	304,000

Notice the downturn in baptisms after 1975 and 2000. The decreases reflect the anticipation of Armageddon in 1975 and "within our twentieth century", and the disappointment when these prophecies failed.

The downturn in 2020-2022 reflects reduced preaching opportunities, including fewer hours put into it, due to the Corona Virus pandemic.

BAR ANERGES

"Bar Anerges" is the pseudonym of a supporter of JWs on the Worldwide Web who naively and uncritically repeats the standard material and arguments seen in recent WTS publications.

Regarding the pseudonym:

In Mark 3:17 "Boanerges" refers to apostles James and John and means "Sons of Thunder".

Dictionary of Greek and Roman Geography Vol. I (1854, William Smith, Editor, Little, Brown and Company) p.589 says "Anerges" is a "Syrio-Chaldaic deity".

In the Old Testament "ben" and "bar" mean "son". In the New Testament "Bar" is prefixed to certain names — Barabbas; Bar-Jesus; Bar-Jonah; Barnabbas; Barsabbas; Bartholomew; Bartimeus.

(See also: *MENTALLY DISEASED*)

BARBADOS

Publishers and Memorial attendance on Barbados and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	869	299		
1975	1,209	208		
1980	1,211	211	3,263	78
1985	1,516	175	4,275	62
1990	1,783	145	5,019	52
1995	2,135	121	6,078	43
2000	2,390	109	5,707	46
2005	2,372	117	5,608	49
2010	2,536	106	6,539	41
2015	2,557	109	6,531	43
2018	2,496	117	5,573	52
	Ave.			
2019	2,414	119	6,190	46
2020	2,357	122	4,317	66
2021	2,394	120	7,857	37
2022	2,360	122	6,732	43
2023	2,290	126	6,020	48
2024	2,318	122	5,957	47
2025	2,322	122	5,473	52

BARBER, CAREY W. (7/1905-4/2007)

Governing Body member who was born in Trowbridge, Wiltshire, England.

Barber was baptized in April 1921 at a convention in Canada. Along with his twin brother he started work at Bethel in 1923 where he operated a printing press and was eventually transferred to the service department.

Barber was appointed "circuit servant" in 1948. The 1950 *Convention Report* calls him a "district servant".

He attended the 26th Gilead missionary class in 1955, married Sydney Lee Brewer in 1956

and was appointed to the Governing Body in 1977. (w1982 8/15 10-14)

BARBOUR, N.H. (1824-1908)
Nelson H. Barbour was a follower of William Miller and later helped to start the cult of C.T. Russell.

Barbour lost his faith after the disappointment of 1844 and went to Australia to join the gold rush. While returning to the USA he studied Daniel and concluded that 6000 years from creation would end in 1873 at which time Jesus would visibly return.

Barbour published these beliefs in his book *Evidences for the Coming of the Lord in 1873 or the Midnight Cry* (1870) and in his magazine *The Midnight Cry*. The magazine was first published in 1873 and discontinued 10/1874 when his predictions failed. In 6/1875 Barbour commenced the *Herald of the Morning*. The name signified his new belief that Jesus had returned invisibly in 1874 and that the preaching work would be completed in 1881.

The Seventh Day Adventist magazine *The Signs of the Times* mentioned Barbour in 1875:

> Dr. N.H. Barbour "proclaims that the Lord has come and raised the righteous, but has not been seen by the living, but has commissioned him [Barbour] and his followers to preach the gospel, yet seven years, and to proclaim the hour of his judgment." When will these time-setting fanatics have done with their folly? (Volume 1, No. 36, July 15, 1875, p.287)

In 1876 Barbour imparted his doctrines, including the doctrine of the Gentile Times to Russell. They jointly published *Three Worlds and the Harvest of This World* (1877).

Page 33 of *Three Worlds* summarizes Barbour's and Russell's prophetic scheme:

> The Bible clearly teaches that the dispensation of the twelve tribes and then under the twelve apostles, are equal in all points, each one ending with a harvest, and each with an advent of Christ, and also they are to be of equal length. That the time of the twelve tribes represented God's peoples measured 1845 years, and that the duration of this gospel to the gentiles is to be 1845 years. That the harvest of the Jewish age lasted 3 1/2 years and that of the Gospels will be 3 1/2 years. That the harvest is the end of the world (aion, age) and that we have now entered into this time of harvest. That the resurrection of the dead in Christ to immortality and the change of the living will be consummated during this harvest, but as voiceless and unknown to the world as was the resurrection and ascension of our Lord (which is not named by any profane historian of that period). That after the harvest this time of trouble already commencing will no longer be held in check but will go from nation to nation like a whirlwind. That the Kingdom of God set up during this time of trouble will like the risen saints be invisible to those in the immortal state who will merely see wonderful spiritual phenomenon from time to time. That the present spiritual phenomenon and visible manifestations are but a mere counterfeit by the angels who sinned and are reserved in chains of darkness unto judgment. Hence darkness is a necessary condition to all their séances. That at or near the end of these forty years of wrath, the remainder of the human family (with one exception those whose lives do not begin until the millennial thousand years are ended) will have a resurrection to a mortal fleshly life. These are they who share in the restitution of all things and are hid in the grave until his wrath is past.

Put briefly, they were in 1877 living in the final 3½ years at the end of which the "dead in Christ" and those alive (in Christ) on Earth would be changed to immortality. The 40 years of wrath was "already commencing" [in 1874], and near the end of the 40 years the rest of humankind would rise from the dead to "fleshly life".

The failure both of the resurrection and the completion of the preaching in 1878 (i.e. after 3½ years from Christ's return in 1874) led to increasing disagreement between Barbour and Russell over doctrine and they separated in 1879.

BAREFOOT, D.
Darek Barefoot is the author of *Jehovah's Witnesses and the Hour of Darkness: Occult Subversion and Blind Faith in the Watchtower Society* (2nd edition 1991) wherein he claims there are, "satanic and occultic images, subliminals, found hidden in watchtower books and magazines":

> Barefoot, a third-generation Witness, began his investigation in 1987. Before it was finished, his business office would be searched and his private correspondence stolen, his eleven-year marriage would be destroyed, and he

> along with five members of his family would be formally condemned and shunned by fellow Witnesses, including relatives and life-long friends...

Barefoot claims that *You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth* (1982 edition) has occult images embedded in pictures on pages 93, 128, 134 and 244. In the next edition (1989) the picture on page 244 had been replaced.

The "occultic images" Barefoot sees are probably examples of the visual illusion known as a "simulacrum" (plural "simulacra") defined by psychologist Laurie Eddie as: "an abstract pattern which produces the impression to people viewing it of some recognizable shape."

Eddie writes:

> As a result simulacra are quite common and can be "seen" in a diverse range of locations, such as … wallpaper, in clouds, on hillsides, or in rock formations. Another very common location is amongst trees and rocks. Some examples … have been elfin faces, a sleeping puppy, and the Madonna.

BARNES, PETER (c.1928-2012)
A JW converted in1949 who moved to the USA in 1969. He was a circuit overseer in charge of 16 congregations but left JWs in 1979, became a Baptist and received his Doctor of Divinity degree in 1994.

Barnes authored *The Watchtower in the Light of Scripture*, served as a director of *Out of Darkness into Light Ministry*, and hosted a Saturday radio program called *Viewpoint on Jehovah's Witnesses.*

BARR, JOHN EDWIN (1913-2010)
Governing Body member appointed to that position on September 9, 1977.

John E. Barr was first listed as an "ordained minister" in the 1943 *Yearbook*. He served full time in the British Isles 1940-1977 and became Secretary/treasurer of the International Bible Students Association in 1975.

Barr was born in Aberdeen, Scotland. His family were Russellites — his grandmother baptized in 1908 and his father in 1912. John Barr had a brother and sister, both older than him. Van Amburgh and A.H. Macmillan of the American headquarters visited and stayed with the Barr family.

Barr started going house to house in 1927. He finished his schooling and was baptized in 1932. He began service at Bethel 1939, followed by three years as a circuit servant, and returned to Bethel in 1946. In 1960 Barr married Mildred Willett a graduate of the 11th Gilead class and pioneer in Ireland.

After joining the Governing Body Barr moved to Brooklyn headquarters. (w1987 7/1 26-31)

BARRY, LLOYD (1916-1999)
New Zealand-born Lloyd Barry served on the Governing Body 1974 to 1999 after serving as branch overseer in Japan. Barry's father, Bill Barry, joined the cult in 1909.

Lloyd Barry won a university entrance scholarship and combined door-knocking with obtaining a Master's degree in science. In January 1939 with Armageddon anticipated within months he opted for full time ministry at the Australian Bethel.

Barry spent five months in prison on the draft issue; wedded a Bethel girl, Melba, in February 1942; special-pioneered in Wagga-Wagga; became a circuit servant in Sydney in 1947; then attended Gilead Missionary School; followed by circuit servant duties in California for one year. He went to Japan as a missionary in November 1949, became branch servant in Tokyo 1952-1974, zone servant to the Organization's Far East branches in 1956, and moved to Brooklyn and joined the Governing Body in 1975.

Barry visited Australia in March 1983 and addressed JWs gathered, nationwide, in their Assembly Halls. His statements included:

> "Those living in 1914 and who have been aware of the great events — their numbers are dwindling. [Matthew 24:34 was here quoted] "Jesus is referring to that generation of 1914. There are still tens of millions living today. No one knows the day or the hour, but it's very close. "Armageddon is very close indeed.
>
> "World leaders all make such a mess of government;
>
> "The heavenly organization has a representative body — the remnant…we would have expected that the nations would gladly accept the Kingdom.
>
> "God's time table is very clear.

"New radical elements particularly the Communist elements have a great deal of power in the UN; These are getting ready to oust the Roman Catholic Church…and all religion; That's what we can look forward to in the very near future.

"We find those who want to teach something different, to muddy up the body of truth revealed during the past 100 years. So we'll flee from anyone who tries to tell us otherwise.

"Young people may want to go to college or university. Is that the way true Christians ought to go? This system has very few years to go! The Kingdom ought to be proclaimed! Get into some activity that brings honour to Jehovah's name! Do your ten years at school, then take up full-time service. The Kingdom preaching must be a first among God's people. Remember the book *You Can Live Forever In Paradise on Earth*. What a beautiful book that is!

"The organization is expanding so fast we cannot keep up. People are just flocking into the truth! [Expansion in Brazil was here cited] All over the world people are flocking to the truth.

"Jehovah's Witnesses are now labelled the second largest religion in Italy. And that's the way it will keep going. Some day they will be the largest whether the Roman Catholic Church likes it or not.

"In Japan they are very happy the end did not come in 1975. 40,000 have been added since then.

"It's a loving, kindly organization.

"In order to survive you have to meet the challenge of these last days. God's people must get out of Babylon the Great and have no more contact with her;

"The grand harvest work will keep gaining impetus right up until the Battle of Armageddon."

Barry authored the books *Good News to Make You Happy* (1976) and *Thy Kingdom Come* (1981).

Barry died on July 1 while on a visit to Hawaii with his sister Janet Wood from New Zealand.

During Barry's life and since, many major doctrines, so-called "truths", have again been changed or discarded. The "muddy up" of the so-called "body of truth" is astounding but most JWs have not "fled from". Even Barry who advised fleeing did not flee.

Barry claimed to be of the 144,000 who according to JWs theology will go to heaven at death. The 144,000 "…may be involved in the communicating of divine truths today." (Revelation Its Grand Climax At Hand! 1988, 125) There is no evidence of Barry communicating "divine truths" from Heaven.

(See more details in *Investigator Magazine* #134 or the *Investigator* website.)

BARTON, MARK ORRIN (1955-1999)

A JW of Stockbridge, Georgia, who on July 29, 1999, killed 12 people and 13 others at two Atlanta trading firms, making him Atlanta's greatest mass murderer.

Prior to the shooting spree he murdered his second wife and two children in his home with hammer blows.

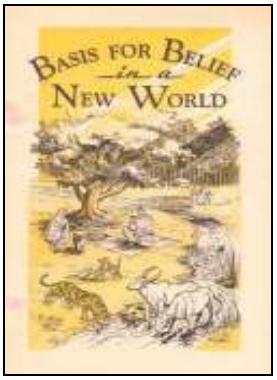
Barton was also a suspect in the bashing deaths of his first wife and mother-in-law in Alabama in 1993 which occurred after he started an affair with his future second wife, but was never charged.

Barton was a "day trader" and, judging from notes left with the bodies of his wife and children, was reacting to his losses of US$105,000 during the previous two months:

> I killed Leigh Ann because she was one of the main reasons for my demise… I know that Jehovah will take care of all of them in the next life. I'm sure the details don't matter. There is no excuse, no good reason. I am sure no one will understand. If they could I wouldn't want them to. I just write these things to say why. Please know that I love Leigh Ann, Matthew and Mychelle with all my heart. If Jehovah's willing I would like to see them all again in the resurrection to have a second chance. I don't plan to live very much longer, just long enough to kill as many of the people that greedily sought my destruction. (Wikipedia)

Barton committed suicide when cornered by police. (The New York Times July 31, 1999)

BASIS FOR BELIEF IN A NEW WORLD (1953)



An official WTS booklet probably authored by Fred Franz.

The booklet begins by saying that Christians (of Christendom) are hypocrites, governments are bad, and neither have done any good. (pp 3-17) Next the Bible's accuracy is defended. (pp 17-48) On page 49 Franz falsely states that Russell predicted the "kingdom would be fully established in 1914." (See: *KINGDOM*) Next come reminders that there will be peace on earth, i.e. a new world, within one generation from 1914.

Considering that modern science and modern medicine originated in Christianity Franz's accusation of hypocrites who have done no good is true of him and JWs not of Christianity. To convince thousands to discontinue their education to falsely preach peace on Earth within one generation must have been a great loss to science and progress.

BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON
Since 1969 JWs have regarded the Battle of Armageddon as the second part of the "Great Tribulation". The second part is the destruction of all governments and nations by the angels of God acting together with earthquakes, destructive weather, and diseases.

The first part of the Great Tribulation is the annihilation of all false religions at the hands of the governments.

JWs believe that they alone will survive.
(See: *ARMAGEDDON*)

BE GLAD YE NATIONS (1946)
Official WTS booklet.

BEANS
C.T. Russell was interested in reports and discoveries that gave promise of prosperity in the Millennium of peace that he predicted. Aside from the infamous Miracle Wheat there were also miracle beans.

The beans, however, were not sold by the WBTS:

> Sister Smith, of Nebraska, recently discovered one stalk of beans which she declares yielded so prolifically that she calls it the Millennial Bean. She desires to get the beans into the hands of others, and at the same time to make a donation to our Tract Fund for the sending forth of free spiritual food to the hungry. (wr 1917 1/15 4960)

BEARDS
C.T. Russell and many of his male followers were bearded.

In 1925 Rutherford began to oppose beards — one of his many strategies to stamp out Russell's influence. Beards projected an image of dignity, authority and maturity. The shaving rule attacked the image of the elders as a prelude to the elimination of the elders themselves.

William Schnell (1971) recalled Rutherford's visit to the German headquarters in Magdeburg in 1925:

> The Director of our German branch, as had many before him, had grown a beard, patterned after Charles T. Russell's beard. The Judge did not want anything at all to remain which might remind him of Russell—not even the cultivation of a beard. So, sitting at the table for dinner one night within my earshot, the Director asked the Judge for one more large rotary press. The Judge said nothing for a while, merely ate. Then suddenly he looked up, his eyes pinned severely on the Director's huge beard and said, "I will buy you the press if you take that thing off," pointing to the beard. It surely shocked the Director's sensibilities, but he meekly heeded the warning and soon shamefacedly appeared minus the beard. (1971)

Jesus was thereafter depicted beardless in WTS publications even though he was a Jew "born under the law" (Galatians 4:4) which required Jewish men to have beards. (Leviticus 19:27; 21:5) *Things In Which It Is Impossible For God To Lie* (1965) has eight pictures on pages 84 to 93 that depict Jesus beardless.

Until 1968 Jesus being beardless remained official teaching — an error which no JWs had

noticed or protested against despite claiming to be the only Bible students out of all religions to understand the Bible.

When the error was corrected in w1968, JWs males had to nevertheless continue to remain beardless because:

> In recent years in many lands a beard or long hair on a man attracts immediate notice and may, in the minds of the majority, classify such a person undesirably with extremists or as rebels against society. God's ministers want to avoid making any impression that would take attention away from their ministry or hinder anyone from listening to the truth. (w1968 5/2 288-289)

The article noted that medieval pictures of Jesus and the apostles "show Christ and his apostles with beards, having emaciated, sad, weak and effeminate monastic counte-nances..." and "The dreary religious pictures are products of the apostasy, which by the fourth century was in full bloom..."

This is a typical *Watchtower* double-standard in reasoning. The JWs leaders don't admit that they falsely portrayed Jesus as beardless for 40 years, and don't call their error "a product of apostasy which with Rutherford was in full bloom", but call their misled followers "God's ministers" who preach "the truth".

Perhaps the sad faces of Jesus or the apostles in some paintings illustrated sadness over sin, oppression, poverty, ignorance, sickness and bigotry — things that aren't laughing matters.

In December 2023 the Governing Body announced that beards were now permissible to JWs males.

BEAST

JWs interpret the various beasts in Revelation as nations. The beast out of the abyss is the League of Nations and the United Nations, according to their current interpretation since WWII. (Revelation 17:8)

The beast out of the sea is the world-wide political system of human governments controlled by Satan the Devil. (Revelation 13) The two-horned beast is the Anglo-American world power i.e. Britain and the USA. (Revelation 13)

BEAST THAT WAS AND IS NOT (Revelation 17:11)

> "As for the beast that was and is not, it is an eighth but it belongs to the seven, and it goes to perdition." (Revelation 17:11)

This was interpreted by Russell as:

> …the Holy Roman Empire—Church and State, united in power from 799 to 1799…the term "And is not" refers to the present non-existence of the Empire in power. (The Finished Mystery 1917, 263)

Reinterpreted by Rutherford (in *Light* Volume II 1930, 92-101) as the Hague International Arbitration Court which "was and it not" when it lost authority during World War I. After World War I it became "an eighth" in the form of the League of Nations:

> The combine of the nations, under the influence of "organized religion", was lined up behind the Hague International Arbitration Court, which during the World War went out of sight but quickly came up out of the pit following the World War: "And the beast that was, and is not [during the World War], even he is the eighth [world power; namely, the combine of the League of Nations with Devil-religion riding], and is of the seven [previous world powers, existing before the World War], and goeth into perdition [at Armageddon, the harlot being first unseated and destroyed]. Rev. 17:11 (w1937 5/1 137)

The idea that the "beast" meant the League of Nations may have been plagiarized from C.F. Hogg and W.E. Vine (author of *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Old and New Testament Words*) who proposed it in 1919:

> Such a League of Nations, for instance, as proposed to-day as a panacea for national wrongs, not only has been foretold in Scripture as the last resource of international politics, but its failure has likewise been predicted. (Hogg, C.F. & Vine, W.E. 1919, Touching the Coming of the Lord, London, p.95)

New interpretations

With World War II the League of Nations ended and so could not "go into perdition at Armageddon". The new interpretation of Revelation 17:11 became that the "beast that was" meant the League of Nations which "is not" during World War II, and became "an eighth" after World War II in the form of the United Nations.

Hundreds of JWs predictions have been revised as events proved them wrong. But to JWs it's all "Bible truth" — all the false prophecies, doctrinal revisions and excuses

are all "Bible truth". The self-proclaimed "spirit-directed", "shepherds" (or leaders) behind it all have never said "sorry" for any of the errors that they imposed on others.

BEASTS

The Bible's last book, Revelation, describes various beasts. JWs interpretations of these beasts have changed several times. Each new interpretation is always the "truth".

A few examples:

1. Russell interpreted the "two-horned beast" (Revelation 13:11) as the Church of England. After Russell's death his prophecies about the Church of England failed, and the two-horned beast was reinterpreted as Britain/USA.

2. The ten-horned, seven-headed beast (Revelation 13:1) was claimed by Russell to be the Papacy. All prophecies regarding this "beast" failed during World War I. The same beast Rutherford reinterpreted as "Satan's visible organization". (w1941 1/15 29-31)

3. The "image of the wild beast" (13:14) and the "eighth beast" or "scarlet beast" (17:3, 7-8, 11) were respectively the Evangelical Alliance of 1846 and the Holy Roman Empire of 799 to 1799. (The Finished Mystery 1917, 209, 263) This too was "truth" but was also changed.

4. The "eighth beast" Rutherford reinterpreted as the Hague International Arbitration Court which "was and it not" during World War I and then became an "eighth" in the form of the League of Nations. (Freedom for the Peoples 1927, 54) The League was: "…the last and final attempt of Satan to perfect an organization that will blind the people." (Deliverance 1926, 274)

The League would, Rutherford predicted, destroy Christendom. (Light II 1930, 92-101) This prophecy failed when the League ended during World War II. It therefore was not "the final attempt of Satan" after all. The same "image" or "scarlet beast" was in 1942, reinterpreted by the new leaders of JWs. The Hague Court was deleted from Bible prophecy and the "image" or "scarlet beast" became the League of Nations and United Nations.

The destruction of Christendom by the scarlet beast aka United Nations was broadened to include the destruction of **all** organized religions (except JWs). (Then Is Finished The Mystery of God 1969, 344)

JWs leaders call these and thousands of other alterations "Bible truth" even though the Bible did not change and actually condemns calling error truth. (Mathew 6:23; 12:36-37; II Timothy 4:3)

BECKFORD, JAMES ARTHUR (1942-2022)

British sociologist of religion; Professor Emeritus of Sociology at the University of Warwick; Fellow of the British Academy.

Beckford served as President of the Association for the Sociology of Religion (1988-1989), and President of the International Society for the Sociology of Religion (1999-2003); honored in 2017 with the Lifetime Achievement Award for Contributions to the Sociology of Religion by the Association for the Sociology of Religion.

Apart from authoring many books and articles on the sociology of religion, including new religious movements, Beckford is noted for his doctoral thesis *The Trumpet of Prophecy* (1975), a useful and important sociological study of JWs.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_A._Beckford

BEHAVIOR

See: *CHARACTER DEVELOPMENT*

BELARUS

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Belarus and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
2000	2,852	3,600	6,950	1,477
2005	3,872	2,575	8,126	1,227
2010	4,779	1,984	8,900	1,065
2015	5,918	1,605	10,212	930
2018	6,146	1,544	10,046	945
	Ave.			
2019	6,132	1,541	10,140	932
2020	6,173	1,524	9,635	976
2021	6,175	1,514	12,764	732
2022	6,100	1,546	11,784	800
2023	6,061	1,554	11,235	838
2024	6,070	1,508	10,711	855

BELAU.

An island nation in the Pacific, officially named the Republic of Palau. See: *PALAU*.

BELGIUM

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Belgium and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	13,271	728		
1975	19,624	495		
1980	18,245	537	37,100	264
1985	21,695	451	42,50	230
1990	25,161	393	48,100	205
1995	27,751	363	50,600	199
2000	25,647	399	46,400	221
2005	24,749	422	44,300	236
2010	25,111	429	43,400	248
2015	25,497	440	43,300	259
2018	25,429	453	43,300	266
	Ave,			
2019	24,923	459	42,900	266
2020	24,984	460	43,900	262
2021	25,768	477	49,000	251
2022	25,835	448	44,300	261
2023	26,048	449	44,600	263
2024	26,359	446	45,200	260
2025	26,511	446	43,200	274

BELIEVE

JWs claim they "believe what the Bible says", and "scriptural truth", and whatever is "Bible based".

However, every time doctrines changed, or prophecy failed — and there have been thousands of changes — the followers had to believe and publicize not what the Bible says, but what the leaders said. (See: *ERROR*)

The phrases "believe what the Bible says" and "believe the Bible" appear 22 times and 210 times respectively on the *Watchtower Library* CD (2007)

BELIEVE ALL THINGS

JWs are not to be suspicious or critical of any WTS publications but believe and obey:

> If we have love for Jehovah and for the organization of his people we shall not be suspicious, but shall, as the Bible says, 'believe all things,' all the things that *The Watchtower* brings out, inasmuch as it has been faithful in giving us a knowledge of God's purposes and guiding us in the way of peace, safety and truth from its inception to this present day. (Qualified to Be Ministers 1967, 156)

The words "it has been faithful in giving us a knowledge of God's purposes and guiding us in the way of peace, safety and truth from its inception" imply that no serious errors and no failed predictions have occurred since 1879 whereas in reality the revisions to doctrines and interpretations number in thousands! This is one reason why the JWs leaders are often regarded as liars by critics, liars from their start as Russell and Russellites in the 1870s to throughout the 20th century!

BELIZE

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Belize (formerly British Honduras) and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	441	271		
1975	603	213		
1980	568	255	2,485	58
1985	712	204	3,257	45
1990	902	206	3,926	47
1995	1,140	175	5,078	39
2000	1,206	191	5,017	46
2005	1,560	173	6,296	43
2010	2,183	139	8,358	36
2015	2,567	136	8,705	40
2017	2,628	143	8,348	45
2018	2,673	143	7,987	48
	Ave.			
2019	2,642	148	8,306	47
2020	2,536	157	6,454	62
2021	2,572	157	9,187	44
2022	2,539	174	8,317	53
2023	2,452	180	7,698	57
2024	2,456	167	7,598	54
2025	2,485	168	7,113	59

BELONG

A term JWs avoid using in regard to their local congregation or the sect as a whole. Rather than say, "I belong to the Portland Congregation" a JW would say, "I attend at the Portland Congregation" or "I associate with the Portland Congregation." Similarly they prefer not to say "I belong to Jehovah's Witnesses", instead "I associate with…" or "I'm a Jehovah's Witness."

BENDER, J. J.

A follower Russell sent to England in 1881 to promote the message there.

Bender had 100,000 copies of *Food for Thinking Christians* printed in London and hired boys to distribute copies at church doors after Sunday service. Bender then arranged distributions in a dozen other cities including in Scotland before returning to the USA.

In mid 1882 the first "Bible Students" meeting was organized in Glascow based on Russell's doctrines. A second group formed in London

in 1883 and by the early 1890s there were 40 groups in the British Isles.

BENIN, REPUBLIC OF
Benin is a country in Western Africa, known as "Dahomey" in colonial times, renamed in 1975.

> Publishers and Memorial attendance in Benin and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	1,807	1,328		
1975	2,381	1,134		
1980	1,550	2,181	2,942	1,149
1985	1,586	2,391	5,545	684
1990	2,290	1,987	10,549	431
1995	4,241	1,159	18,115	271
2000	6,343	872	27,288	203
2005	8,366	809	34,600	201
2010	10,687	633	39,400	172
2015	12,430	875	41,700	261
2018	13,644	842	44,700	257
	Ave.			
2019	13,346	884	45,475	260
2020	13,003	932	29,800	407
2021	13,155	946	37,600	331
2022	13,410	953	38,900	328
2023	14,115	930	44,700	293
2024	14,896	971	49,200	294
2025	15,800	898	47,507	299

BENSON, PHIL (1936-)
A JW whose story appears in *Free Minds* magazine and his disassociation letter on the Internet.

Benson was baptised in1954 and married a "pioneer sister" in 1957. Both did the Gilead missionary course in South Lansing (New York) in 1960.

They were then sent to the Philippines where Phil set up the printing equipment at the branch office in Quezon City and "trained the local brothers to operate the factory..."

With his wife pregnant they had to leave the branch office and went to Utah (USA) with their two boys. Phil worked in Salt Lake City as a graphic arts specialist and organized assemblies for JWs but: "I never had any time for my two boys... I was busy 'serving Jehovah.'"

In 1975 they transferred to Las Vegas, Nevada, where in addition to his job he did "part-time circuit work".

Phil was disfellowshipped followed by divorce after which:

> I taught at the University of Nevada for ten years and published four books on history and printing…

He then got reinstated to JWs and married again.

BENE YESHUA
Bene Yeshua or "students of Jesus" is located in Charlotte, North Carolina and is:

> …a reform movement of Jehovah's witnesses that is dedicated to sharing knowledge about God and His purpose for humanity through history, science and scripture.
> [www.beneyeshuatemple.com]

Bene Yeshua agrees with secular historians that Nebuchadnezzar destroyed Jerusalem in 586 BCE, not 607 BCE as believed by JWs.

BEREAN BIBLE
A Bible published by the Russellites with a verse by verse commentary.

BEREAN BIBLE STUDENTS
An Australian continuation of Russellism which split from Rutherford's control in 1918 when he made the acceptance of *The Finished Mystery* the test of loyalty and fellowship.

The Bereans still hold meetings in Perth, Melbourne and Sydney. From their main base in Melbourne they publish the *People's Paper*, *The Voice*, and various booklets.

BEREAN QUESTIONS
In Russell's time these were lists of questions to accompany the study of Russell's books and *Zion's Watch Tower*.

BEREAN STUDIES ON...
Most WBTS publications after Rutherford's leadership intended for group study have had the questions at the bottom of each page, but in Russell's time separate question booklets were used. The *Berean Studies* are booklets of questions on Russell's six volumes and on *The Finished Mystery*.

BEREAN [BIBLE] STUDY
Meetings in which Russell's books were studied.

BERGMAN, JERRY (1945-)
Former American JW who became a college professor and lecturer with eight college degrees and several Ph.Ds.

Bergman:
- Authored or co-authored about 50 books and 600 magazine/journal articles;
- Was a frequent guest on TV and radio;
- Addressed audiences on college campuses in Europe and USA;
- Has appeared as an expert witness in over 150 court cases involving JWs.

He has served as a consultant for CBS News, ABC news, *Reader's Digest* and Amnesty International. He is Fellow of the American Scientific Association, a member of The National Association for the Advancement of Science and other professional associations.

Bergman's mother, two aunts and some cousins joined JWs in the 1950s and Bergman was baptized in 1960. He writes:

> I learned very early to conform, even to minor aspects of Watchtower teaching such as dress because I knew I would be shunned, avoided, gossiped about, or even disfellowshipped if I did not…
>
> I trudged from door-to-door selling Watchtower literature and calling myself a minister at age 8.
> (JW Research Journal Volume 4 No. 3, 1997 pp 9, 10, 13)

Bergman knew about past JWs prophecy failures and expressed the view that the WTS should not stick its neck out regarding 1975. This caused conflict because: "Many felt very strongly that 1975 was *the last possible* year for Armageddon…" (ibid p.15)

In 1973 Bergman taught psychology at Bowling Green State University (Ohio) and was "swamped with requests for help" by JWs with emotional problems:

> I was soon dealing with serious mental problems of every type… I tried to tactfully present the information to the Watchtower… I was told I was both presumptuous and showed a lack of submission to Jehovah's loving mother organization in daring to point out that there was room for improvement. (p.14)

He visited former WBTS Vice President Hayden C. Covington:

> What I learned more than just upset me, it revolted me. My whole ship of salvation was now rapidly sinking, causing me enormous depression… Although I did not formally resign until 1980 … by 1974 I was already totally disillusioned with the Watchtower. (p.14)

Books Bergman has authored include:
- *Jehovah's Witnesses and Kindred Groups* (1984)
- *Jehovah's Witnesses and the Problem of Mental Health* (1990)
- *Jehovah's Witnesses A Comprehensive and Selectively Annotated Bibliography* (1999)

In the first and third book Bergman lists thousands of references dealing with JWs — books, journal articles, law reports, tracts, newsletters, and booklets.

Bergman graduated from Wayne State University with his bachelor's degree in 1970 and completed a Ph.D. in biomedical science in 1976. In 1986 he finished an M.A. in social psychology from the Bowling Green State University and subsequently joined the teaching staff, but was dismissed in 1980.

By 1992 he had obtained a Ph.D. in human biology from Columbia Pacific University which was unaccredited and later closed by court order. By 1999, he had earned a master's degree in biomedical science at Medical College of Ohio.

Criticism

P.Z. Myers has debated evolution with Bergman and claims he misrepresents Charles Darwin.
http://scienceblogs.com/pharyngula/2014/10/29/creationist-debacle-at-michigan-state/

A review of *Jehovah's Witnesses A Comprehensive and Selectively Annotated Bibliography* says:

> Unfortunately, the bibliography's comprehensiveness is the only positive characteristic of this work. The annotations suffer from subjective usage, unfounded or incomplete evaluations, and tabloid irrelevance…
>
> He describes the organization as "corrupted," "inhuman," and "dishonest" while its various teachings, such as the blood transfusion doctrine and the prophetic year 1914, are evaluated as "tragic," "erroneous," and "wrong" (pp 95, 98, 100, 111).

> Bergman qualifies hundreds of sources — including some of his own (p.119) — as "excellent" without providing any argument for this appraisal…
>
> An inclination to outright sensationalism can be detected in annotations about the alleged relationship between WBTS membership and adverse behavior…
> Richard Singelenberg
> http://jehovah.to/gen/freedom/review.htm

(See *Investigator Magazine* #76 for Bergman's *Vita*; and #99 for his meeting with H.C. Covington, both articles also available at: https://investigatormagazine.net)

BERMUDA

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bermuda and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	118	449		
1975	200	300		
1980	228	252	502	114
1985	328	168	750	73
1990	373	157	849	69
1995	418	143	893	67
2000	419	150	1,028	61
2005	443	148	1,019	64
2010	476	143	996	68
2015	526	118	909	68
2018	521	117	927	66
	Ave.			
2019	432	146	851	74
2020	387	160	798	78
2021	403	154	1,068	58
2022	389	159	963	64
2023	385	161	870	71
2024	391	164	850	75
2025	399	163	822	79

BEROEANS

People labelled "noble minded" in Acts 17:11 because they tested what the Apostles taught by checking the Scriptures.

JWs often refer to the Beroeans when urging other people to leave their religion and join JWs. JWs supplement the Beroean example with comment such as:

> Many people do not know whether the Bible teaches what they believe, because they are not taught or encouraged to follow the Scriptural rule: "Make sure of all things." (1 Thess. 5:21)
>
> … Should the crumbling of what is false be feared? Of course not, for Jesus Christ said: "The truth will set you free."
>
> … Instead of saying that beliefs do not matter, God's Word declares: "Keep testing whether you are in the faith, keep proving what you yourselves are." (2 Cor. 13:5) (w1960 4/15 228-229)

JWs themselves, however, do not research the Scriptures and "test whether you are in the faith". Instead they study WTS publications and Bible quotations that these publications cite. This has led millions of JWs to preach false prophecies (even calling false prophecy "the Creator's promise") and many doctrines that were later changed.

One Beroean among JWs

Governing Body member Ray Franz imitated the Beroeans and checked the Scriptures and criticized (among other things) the doctrine that people who witnessed 1914 would live to see Armageddon. He was excommunicated even though he was "noble minded", "made sure", did not "fear the crumbing of what is false", and "tested … the faith".

Franz's research was confirmed in 1995 and the Governing Body was disconfirmed when they replaced their prophecy of the last generation with a new definition of "generation".

(See: *GENERATION; ERROR; DATES; CREATOR'S PROMISE*)

How to check, test, confirm and discover

It should be noted that the Beroeans consulted the Scriptures directly which JWs don't do. JWs could potentially do so by using:

- *Young's Concordance* or
- *Englishman's Hebrew and Chaldee Concordance* and
- *Englishman's Greek Concordance of the New Testament*.

In the latter two any Bible word can be looked up in Hebrew, Greek or English and every passage with that word consulted. A clear, detailed explanation of how to do this and the benefits that result is the article "Bible Investigation Method" in *Investigator Magazine* #193, also available at
https://investigatormagazine.net

JWs do not properly "search" "research" or "test". They are not permitted to by their leaders, but merely repeat interpretations that their leaders give to them. Despite calling themselves "ministers", a word which

elsewhere identifies people who did four or more years of fulltime study, very few JWs do even basic Bible research or test their own doctrines using concordances.

Study and research with the aid of concordances, even the Hebrew Concordance, is not hard to learn. The writer did it, and taught himself, when he had only an unfinished, barely passed, highschool education and was a factory worker. If you agree that testing for accuracy would be valuable consult "Bible Investigation Method".

The quote above from *Watchtower* 1960-April is one of many examples of the Governing Body urging others to do what JWs don't themselves do and would be excommunicated if they did.

BEST, THE VENERABLE J. [Joseph] (1880-1965)

Archdeacon of Ballarat (Australia) and author of *"Big Business" In Religion* subtitled "being A Scathing Criticism and Exposure of the Origin and Methods of American Book-selling Corporations". (c.1933, Baxter & Stubbs Printers)

In this 16-page booklet Best quotes Rutherford extensively and refutes many JWs beliefs of the 1930s. He regards Rutherford's organization as a "Big Business" enterprise aiming for profits, and which attacks clergy and governments and twists much of the Bible for sensationalism to increase sales:

> They who know what the Bible is, know also that it was never in the history of the world so seriously twisted, distorted, and misused to make a trap for fools, to earn tremendous profits for a soulless printing corporation. (p.7)
>
> American Big Business uses the cloak of religion to achieve its purpose. It registers itself under several titles, claiming that each is a religious, benevolent, charitable, and philanthropic corporation. Customs duties can thus be evaded. Liberty of expression under the name of religion can thus be claimed, while licence can be used to the utmost extreme…
>
> They foresaw that the clergy would analyse the utter falsity of the message printed. They knew that the clergy would reveal to the people how basely they were misusing the Bible. They knew that a tame message would not sell. It had to be off the beaten track, it had to be unique, it had to have sensation and sting in it. For these reasons a venomous attack was made upon the clergy. There is hardly a page from cover to cover in some books where no bitter reference is made to the clergy. The clergy have every epithet cast against them, and church people are termed "members of Satan's organization." (p.9)

Best also recognizes another of Rutherford's motives besides profit: "He had suffered much in Atlanta penitentiary, and came out an embittered man after his period of incarceration."

Rutherford, however, had a third motive, one which Best did apparently not notice, which was to empty all churches of their followers and replace them with his Watchtower religion over the entire world.

BEST RELIGION, BEST PEOPLE

WTS publications portray JWs as being the most moral, best informed, most righteous people on Earth, and other religions as led by "faithless clergymen":

> They are making better fathers, better mothers, better children, in fact, the best people in the world. (w1970 4/15 248)
>
> Honest hearted people who now come streaming into Jehovah's visible theocratic organization are attracted by the wonders of a spiritual paradise. Nowhere else on earth have they found righteousness and justice. They have had their fill of faithless clergymen ... their eyes have been opened to a society of God-fearing men and women among whom senseless and unprincipled ones are never whitewashed and made to appear noble... (w1984 5/15 21)

However, the entries *CRIME AND COURTS* and *CHILD SEXUAL ABUSE* in this dictionary indicate extensive criminal conduct among the so-called "best people in the world".

The entry *GOAL OF WORLD DOMINATION* shows that the JWs leaders routinely stigmatize other religions as "faithless", "senseless", "unprincipled" and other disparaging descriptions as part of their goal of replacing all religions and governments with a "new world society" composed entirely of JWs.

(See also: *VITUPERATION*)

BETH SARIM



Beth Sarim (Salvation 1939, 311)

"Beth Sarim" meaning "house of princes" was completed in 1929 at San Diego, California, by the WTS and deeded to Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David and other Bible worthies. (Yearbook 1943, 9)

The property title was:

> …vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistant for the present and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. (Salvation 1939, 311)

The 1975 *Yearbook* says: "…a direct contribution was made for the purpose of constructing a house in San Diego for Brother Rutherford's use. It was not built at the expense of the Watch Tower Society."

In addition to functioning as a holiday mansion for Rutherford and location where he wrote his books, Beth Sarim was built to bolster the prophetic beliefs of his followers. Predictions and suggestions that the resurrection of the "princes" could occur in 1924, 1925, 1926 and 1928 had failed and cult membership shrank as tens of thousands voted with their feet. Beth Sarim was a physical expression of the oft-repeated excuse that the prophecies had not failed but merely delayed slightly.

Rutherford wanted to be buried at Beth Sarim but the "religionists put up a great howl" and a WTS petition to the authorities was ignored.

The house continued to be "held in trust for the occupancy of those princes on their return." The property meanwhile was farmed to produce food and seven JWs used the house as a base for their preaching activities.

In 1942 it was claimed:

> Therefore those faithful men in the graves shall shortly now … come forth, receiving their life from him who gave himself a ransom for them. (The New World 1942, p.102)
>
> …those faithful men of old may be expected back from the dead any day now…
> The most recent facts show that the religionists of this doomed world are gnashing their teeth because of the testimony which that House of Princes bears to the new world. (p.104)

Any "gnashing of teeth" would have been by the JWs leaders, this being indicated by them selling the house in 1948 and rarely mentioning it again! The phrase in the property deed "For ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes" proved to be false — "forever" lasted less than 20 years!
(*Investigator Magazine* 95, 2004 March)

BETH SARIM — NEWSPAPER ARTICLE
In 1931 the *The San Diego Sun* reported:

> A gaunt unshaven tramp has been the lone claimant for the $75,000 Southern California mansion of David, king of Israel since it was deeded to the ancient character nearly a year ago.
>
> This was revealed, today by *Judge James* Rutherford ex-Mts court jurist, temporary owner of the luxuriantly-furnished Spanish-type mansion at 440 Braeburn rd in the exclusive Kensington Heights district.
>
> In one of the oddest deeds ever recorded, Rutherford, president of the International Bible Students' Association and the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, has placed in trust the magnificent estate for ancient kings and prophets of Israel.
>
> The slayer of Goliath and his companions may occupy the 10-room, modern home with its landscaped gardens and patio as soon as their credentials are approved by Rutherford and officials of his Societies, divinely authorized to recognize them.
>
> "One morning as I was going from the house to the garage, a queer-looking creature approached me, tipped his dirty hat and cried, "Howdy, Judge. I'm David."
>
> "Go and tell that to the winds," I told him and he left without arguing the matter. I could see at a glance he was not David. He didn't look like I knew David would look."

Asked bow he expected David and his distinguished brethren to look, Rutherford without hesitation opened his huge Bible and pointed to a verse which said that the Princes of the Universe would be risen from the dead "as perfect men."

"I interpret that to mean," the tall, dignified judge declared, "that David, Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jeptha, Joseph and Samuel will he sent here to wrench the world from Satan's grasp, clothed in modern garb as we are, and able with little effort to speak our tongue.

Rutherford pictured the arrival of the biblical delegation perhaps in frock coats, high hats, canes and spats.

At BETH SARIM 'House of the Princes' as Rutherford has named his mansion, David will find the most modern appliances that science has devised.

When the distinguished guests walk up the circular stairway to the second floor, they will find a large office with red-leather chairs and shiny flat-topped desk and inverted lighting. Even French telephones await the touch of the princes.

Opening a wide door, the native sons of Palestine will behold a large bathroom resplendent in shiny black tile with needle shower and amply-filled medicine chest.

What a thrill giant-shouldered Samson, who wrecked a palace with his bare fists, might find in the gold safety razor and strop!

Rutherford built the second-floor bedroom, which he temporarily occupies, large in order to accommodate several of the expected owners.

With wide-pane windows that look out on the purple Cuyamacas to the east and California's first mission to the north, the bedroom is almost severe in its furnishings

The rulers of the universe will have simple tastes, the judge apparently believes, although the austere end tables sported gaily-covered fiction magazines.

Rutherford has imported some Kolnisch Wasser from Cologne, Germany to freshen the princely faces after shaving. A black skull cap hangs over one of the bedposts.

The coming of David and his companions will be the greatest news story of the ages, Rutherford predicted. "I am not a publicity seeker," Rutherford said with a twinkle in his kindly, brown eyes, "but I feel that the world should know about their arrival. It will be a great news story."

Word of his "House of King David" has reached into every corner of the world, the judge stated.

"Everywhere I went people asked me about this place," Rutherford said. "In Chicago a millionaire manufacturer offered to build another house for David but I declined the offer. "Literally thousands have driven here to see this place," Rutherford continued. "Many have come to the door and my secretary has shown them about the place."

The patio with its silver pool end olive and palm trees is gay with flowers. Down toward the canyon, paths have been landscaped to allow David and his friends to walk in meditation. Many of the fruits and trees, native to their Palestine, will greet the rulers when they arrive.

In the two-car garage next door stands a new, yellow 16-cylinder coupe which will be turned over to the rulers along with other personal property on the place.

"Everything will be theirs, the house, the land, the furnishings and even the clothes if they need them," Judge Rutherford said. "What will I do? Oh, don't worry about me. I'll manage somehow," the Judge smiled.

The seven famous men will not have long to rest at their San Diego estate because they soon will lead the forces of the Lord to vanquish the minions of Satan at the battle of Armagedon Rutherford believes.

"But they will win out. The Lord will punish the devil and will show that the preachers and the politicians have been giving the people false counsel," Rutherford said confidently.
(San Diego Sun, January 9, 1931)

BETH SHAN — HOUSE OF SECURITY
A secret mansion owned by the WBTS from 1939-1945 and situated near Beth Sarim in San Diego, California.

Beth Shan, located on 75-acre property, was a bigger mansion than Beth Sarim. It had several out-houses, a 4,000-gallon tank of diesel, seven acres of cultivated land, a 10,000-gallon water tank, and two underground bomb shelters with storage shelves and three-foot thick concrete ceilings.

Access to Beth Shan was via a half-mile dirt track and a gate guarded by WTS personnel.

The Beth Shan deed said in part:

> NOW THEREFORE this trust is created and said trustee shall hold the title to said property in trust for the use and benefit of the following named persons, whose names appear in the Bible at the book of Hebrews, chapter eleven, verses one to forty, to wit: Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Sara, Joseph, Moses, Rahab, Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephtha, David, Samuel.
> Until such time as the aforementioned persons return and identify themselves to the legal representatives of the said WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY and the consent of said Society take possession and control of said premises, the President of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY shall have the right and be duty bounded to direct the management and use of said premises hereby conveyed and to determine who shall be in possession and have the active management thereof.
> (JW Research Journal Volume 4, No. 3, Summer 1997 p 4)

Beth Shan was mentioned in WBTS literature only once — *Consolation* 1942 May 27, p.9. The context was the burial of "Judge" Rutherford after the authorities had turned down a request for a one-grave cemetery at Beth Sarim. Therefore the WBTS tried for a grave at Beth Shan, which was also turned down.

The Reason for Beth Shan

Why did the WBTS buy and develop Beth Shan? According to the deed Beth Shan would accommodate the resurrected Bible heroes and be a retreat for the WTS president. But there was another reason.

In 1926 *The Golden Age* predicted: "…the next war will be … an annihilation! There will be poison and explosion everywhere, beneath the whole canopy of the heavens." (June 2, p.55)

In 1935 the WTS booklet *Universal War Near* referred to: "…the few remaining months until the breaking of that universal cataclysm…" (p.27)

In 1938 the WTS taught that totalitarian governments would rule the world prior to Armageddon. *Face The Facts* (1938) says: "The totalitarian combine is going to get control of England and America." (pp 20, 21, 27)

Face The Facts also taught that Armageddon was too close for marriage and child rearing (pp 46-50). This message was repeated in the books *Salvation* (1939 pp 318-331) and *Children* (1941). The latter is about two JWs juveniles who discuss Rutherford's doctrines and decide to forego marriage for "a few years" until Armageddon has come and gone. (pp 328, 274-281)

The storage shelves in the Beth Shan bomb shelters are explained by:

> In passing, the opinion is here expressed for the information of those who have hearing ears, that a great famine is certain to afflict the many nations of the earth in the very near future. The United States is also in line for much suffering... (w1941 11/15 343)

In 1941 *The Watchtower* again had the expression "the remaining months before Armageddon". (September 15, p.288)

It is clear, therefore, that the reason for Beth Shan was as a refuge to protect the top JWs leaders from war, famine and other trials, and keep them secure and well-fed, during the "remaining months before Armageddon"!

By 1945 events proved the leaders wrong regarding world rule by the Nazis/Fascists and Armageddon being only months away. Beth Shan was no longer needed to protect them and was sold.

(See: *Investigator* 61, July 1998)

BETHEL

"Bethel" is a Hebrew word which means "House of God".

"Plymouth Bethel" was the Hicks Street mission building of the Plymouth Congregational Church in Brooklyn purchased in 1908 by the WBTS as venue for its New York offices and renamed "Brooklyn Tabernacle." (w1909 3/1)

The name "Bethel" was retained for the four-story building at 124 Columbia Heights, where Beecher had lived, and which became the living quarters for WTS staff.

BETHEL ANTIQUARIAN BOOKS
American book business in Danville, California in the 1990s until discontinued in 2002 which specialized in WTS books and other books about JWs. *Bethel Antiquarian Books* was also the name of their brochure/price list.

Many WTS books had by the 1990s become collectors items. *Bethel Antiquarian Books* for June 1 1998, for example, advertised approximately 550 items including:

- Cole, M 1955 *Jehovah's Witnesses* $49
- MacMillan, A.H. (1957) *Faith on the March* $199
- *Scenario of the Photo-Drama of creation* (1914) $299
- *Millions Now Living Will Never Die* 1920, German edition $349
- *Comfort for the Jews* (1925) Hardbound edition $349.

The *New Acquisitions* newsletter (Volume 1, Number 1 February 1996) listed 40 items including:

- *Watchtower*, bound, 1951-1954, each volume $99
- J.F. Rutherford: *Intolerance*, 1933 $99
- C.T. Russell: *The Divine Plan of the Ages and The Great Pyramid* $499
- W.E. Van Amburgh: *The Way to Paradise*, 1925 $349
- *Shining as Illuminators in the World*, 1989 $399

BETHEL FAMILY
A term which refers to live-in workers at WTS branch offices and farms. More specifically, JWs speak of "the Brooklyn Bethel family", "the Sydney Bethel family", etc.

The 2017 Service Year Report calls them all "ordained ministers" and: "19,730 ordained ministers staff the branch facilities".

BETHEL GUEST BOOK
A website by Randall Watters of *Free Minds Journal* which invites former Bethel volunteers to leave comments.
www.freeminds.org/bethel/bethelguest.htm

BETHEL HEADQUARTERS
The WTS's world headquarters complex in Brooklyn, New York, which included 30 buildings until sold in the early 21st century, was often referred to as "Bethel" or "New York Bethel".

In other countries the WTS's headquarters (including offices and factories) at the national level are also called Bethel, and working there is called "Bethel Service".

The live-in accommodation for WTS workers at the various branch headquarters is called the "Bethel Home".

BETHEL HOME
The residence section at the branch office facilities of the WTS for the volunteer workers.

BETHEL LIBRARY
"Bethel library" refers to the library at the various WTS branch offices, in particular at the main headquarters in America.

Barbara Anderson, research assistant at Brooklyn Headquarters for the book *Jehovah's Witnesses Proclaimers of God's Kingdom* (1993), sent the following information to Len Miller which he shared on the Internet:

---

16 January 2009

As to information about the libraries in Bethel, I'll try to answer your questions. However, I don't think I can validate that there was a "secret" room which was used to hide Watch Tower literature that the organization doesn't want people to see.

When I was in Bethel, the Writing Library was located on the 8th floor of the 25 Columbia Heights office building. It was under the control of librarian and senior writer, Gene Smalley, and his secretary/assistant, Sarah Hall. My office was also on the 8th floor, at the East River end of the building. A lobby and elevators located in the center of each floor in the building divided all the floors in half. The library was located in the central part at the other end of the 8th floor with staffs' private offices located around the library. I recall that there were about eight to ten offices of average size on each side of the library, along with Klein's very large office on one side. To me, the Writing Department's library seemed huge, but I have no idea how many books there were and the area they all occupied.

The use of the library was confined to the Writing, Art, and Graphics departments — which all fell under the control of Writing. Any Bethelites not connected with these departments, and wishing to

use the library for research, needed special permission to do so. Otherwise it was off-limits.

Special tours could be arranged by staff to bring friends and relatives into the Writing Department and staff guides could show them the library. During the nearly four years when I was in that department, I brought in quite a number of visitors and showed them interesting items on the shelves and told them how the department operated. There was no prohibition against taking pictures that I can remember. In fact, many visitors in my tours took pictures.

To the best of my knowledge, every Watch Tower Society publication could be found in the Writing Department's library. In addition, there were hundreds of books not published by the Society. There were Bible commentaries galore, and shelves upon shelves of old and new books on religion, Bible history, and archeology. There were also books about current events. One of the assignments from my overseer, Karl Adams, was to list every publication which J. F. Rutherford had written.

This I was able to do because I had also had access to every book the Society published. Karl wanted a fresh look at the number and names of Rutherford's books and so I did not use some previously published list. All of my assignments involved the Society's publications in some way or the other, so how could I have done my job if all of the books were not available for me to see. To believe that there was some secret room where Watch Tower secret books were hidden is not something I can accept. Since I was researching for the compilation of a history book, I was given unlimited opportunity to go anywhere in the Bethel complex and talk to anybody about the Society's history, so there's no reason to suppose that there were hidden and secret books. If there were, I believe I would have found them or heard about them in those three years of research.

During my detective-like investigation of the Society's history, I found material no one knew of before, so why would the Governing Body and the Writing departments try to hide material from me? I remember a storage closet located at the end of the 8th floor near my office, which contained only "apostate" books. That was open to the Writing staff. All the publications we are familiar with that are in opposition to Jehovah's Witnesses could be found there. At the time, I was too busy to read any of them. Also, I might add, I was not interested in them because I believed they were filled with lies about "Jehovah's organization."

Located all around the Bethel homes were smaller libraries such as you would find in many Kingdom Halls. Inside, there usually were a few chairs, lamp tables and a couch. The shelves would generally contain all seven volumes of the Reprints of the Watchtower journals from 1879-1919, many Bible translations, and miscellaneous Watchtower Society books.

There were other books that Gene thought could be of some importance and which Bethelites might need for personal research. In all my Writing Department tenure, I never heard of a hidden library, but I knew of a private archival storage area that only Gene and his secretary/assistant frequented. I don't know where it was located because I didn't think to ask and because it was none of my business. It probably was behind one of the closed office doors on the 8th or 9th floor of the building. In such a room, Gene and his assistant stored old Society correspondence and duplicate copies of some very old Society publications which Gene would use to replace excessively worn copies found on the library shelves. I had access to the contents of the off-limits archival room but only through a formal request. All I had to do was ask to see an item and it was checked out to me within a few hours.

Here are some examples of what was kept inside:

Any or all of the letters that T. Russell wrote on a particular subject, the Russells' divorce court trial transcript, C.T. Russell's appeals of the divorce and other papers to do with those events, Rutherford's and the Society's private papers related to the Watch Tower directors' sedition trial which took place in June, 1918 anything to do with the Photo-Drama of Creation.

In the Russell and Rutherford era it was common for the Bible Students to publish one-page, newspaper size tracts, which were then handed to people outside of conventions, etc. Some of these papers strongly resembled newspapers or large advertisements which, I believe, was the

Society's intent, in order that people would be more inclined to accept that free copy. I have a copy of one which, at first glance, appears to be a union newspaper, but upon closer examination, it was announcing the Kingdom as the hope of mankind — not of any union. During those years, there were many of these produced and the Writing Department kept the original, yellowed, and fragile copies in the Writing Department's archival room rather than on some library bookshelf.

Writing staff member, Ciro Aulicino, was there to provide us with any books we wanted for research from the huge downtown New York City Public Library. He went there every Wednesday to fill our orders. Don Kommers, of the Building Office, kept a warehouse storage area which contained huge quantities of old Society literature and other material associated with the Witness work. That unfinished room was located on an otherwise empty and unfinished floor of the 30 Columbia Heights building. There, I saw plenty of raw wooden shelves that held many, many sets of WT Reprints; sets of Millennial Dawn and Studies in the Scriptures; sets of the Rutherford "Rainbow" series books; Russell and Rutherford wax records; old record players, and anything else connected with the early activities of the religion. There was a large basket filled with "Cross and Crown" pins; plus other miscellaneous items that the Bible Students wore, or used.

These included little books which they would fill with names and birth dates of other Bible Students. They also included cards with Bible texts that they would send to each other. Kommers was Vern Wisegarver's assistant. Vern managed the Building Office. That office, amongst other things, oversaw the upkeep of the interior of both Columbia Heights buildings. During the course of going to estate sales and warehouses during furniture auctions, Kommers and his assistants would bring back to his storage area any old WT literature they would find. Estates, which Watch Tower was beneficiary, supplied plenty of old literature that went into Watch Tower trucks to be brought back and stored in that room. Kommers once showed me a 2" x 2" (that's teeny) Bible that he claimed belonged to Russell and that he obtained during one of his ventures. He also told me he had a large private collection of personal Russell and Rutherford letters.

A memorable experience

I once went into a small room located on the Writing Department's floor which had thousands of file folders containing the submitted final copy of each author's last draft of material that ended up printed in WT literature. Attached to each manuscript was the source material. In that room there also was this huge (wide, not tall) metal file cabinet. One of its drawers contained quotes from letters that were from those who claimed to be of the anointed. Before the publishing of the book, Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose, a request had gone out from the Society to every congregation in the US. Whether it went around the world, I don't know.

The letter asked for the names and addresses of the most loyal of the older "anointed" ones. If that person was a pioneer, better yet. These "old" faithful folks were asked to send to the Society any of their experiences which demonstrated their loyalty, etc., as Witnesses throughout their years of service. Some of these people even lived when Russell was around and the Society certainly wanted to hear all C. T. Russell experiences. Thrilled is not adequate to describe the feelings, expressed by these people, that they would actually get such an invitation.

They responded by the thousands. The letters (many of them were very lengthy) were cut up according to experience and all of them were found in that cabinet. The manila file folders which contained the experiences were broken down into subjects. Each experience, by being cut from the original letter, had no identification on it, so the name of the letter writer was reattached. It must have been a huge undertaking to do this work. These experiences made up the ones found in the Divine Purpose book and the 1975 Yearbook. For what it's worth, Karl Adams wrote the 1975 Yearbook. John Wischuck was the author of the Divine Purpose book. I was told that Divine Purpose had so many errors in it, that's why they came out with Jehovah's Witnesses — Proclaimers of God's Kingdom.

BETHEL LIFE at BROOKLYN
The following is adapted from *Apocalypse Delayed* (J. Penton, 1988) pp 221-227.

The WTS publishing houses and factories in Brooklyn Heights were an impressive sight from across the East River in Manhattan. The complex included residence buildings for thousands of workers who produced literature, and buildings for the administrative, clerical, and support staffs.

The factories, printeries, offices and residences were collectively called "Bethel". Visitors got guided tours of the main factory and saw huge printing presses pour out "spiritual food". Access to the libraries, however, was restricted.

The rooms occupied by workers were plain but adequate. The rooms of new arrivals were spartan in furnishing and without air-conditioning. Governing Body members and other senior staff had comfortable apartments.

Life at Bethel was highly regulated. Workers awoke at 6:30am to the sound of bells, were summoned to meals by bells, and stopped eating by the bell.

Mealtimes were communal occasions when the Bethel family gathered in dining halls. After a prayer they ate with gusto because time allotted for meals was short. The food was nutritious but plain, produced on Watch Tower farms, and prepared in Bethel kitchens. A daily Scripture was read from the *Yearbook*, comments on it made, and messages relayed to the family. In Rutherford's and Knorr's presidencies meal times were sometimes occasions for public criticism of those who had committed infractions.

Bethelites attended the meetings in New York City congregations. They spent much time travelling to and from meetings, proselytized in the evenings and on weekends, and conducted congregation meetings. On Monday evenings they also attended a Bethel family study. After fulfilling these obligations, besides doing their work, they had little time for anything else.

New male volunteer workers attended eight lectures colloquially called "new boy talks" to learn the strict rules regarding personal conduct and grooming. For years only Blacks and Hispanic Americans were allowed to wear moustaches but beards remained banned.

Dress codes were strict as well. Although many Bethelites did dirty work they could not appear too casually dressed outside the factory buildings. In the past they could not wear blue jeans or tennis shoes. "New boys" were warned against fornication and masturbation.

Women Bethel workers received similar discipline as the "boys" as Barbara Grizzuti Harrison showed in her autobiographical book *Visions of Glory*. Generally, they did housekeeping, cleaning, and clerical work.

During Rutherford's time marriage was rare at Bethel permitted only to a few essential personnel. After Nathan Knorr got married in the 1950s he allowed other long-serving Bethel workers the freedom to marry. Until 1976 a Bethelite could only wed another Bethelite. Single women workers were in demand as prospective marriage mates and had their pick of husbands within the mainly male community.

From 1976 Bethel workers in residence for a year or more were allowed to marry within the larger Witness community and bring their mates to Bethel. By late 20th century many Bethel women were married.

Although women's work at Bethel was humdrum, men fared worse. Under Rutherford and Knorr new workers could be placed in occupations for which they had no aptitude. Men with few mechanical skills might be assigned to learn technical jobs in printing while others with good educations and writing ability might mop floors and clean toilets. This was done to teach them humility — an idea the WTS leaders may have copied from the Jesuits.

The turnover of Bethel workers was great. Until the mid-1970s, new volunteers agreed to stay at least four years. If they left earlier, except for health or serious family reasons, they were treated as spiritual failures and temporarily denied "privileges" in the congregation they returned to. The average stay was less than two years not counting the permanent core staff.

Because many left with low morale the Society changed the system. From 1976 new workers agreed to stay one year which is probationary. Thereafter, if they maintained a good record, they could stay or depart as preferred.

Bethel workers generally accepted the regimen. Most were from devout families or were zealous converts who had pioneered before going to headquarters. They were ideologically committed, accepted authority without question, believed Bethel imparted holiness to its residents, and were thrilled to be near their Governing Body. Having been at Bethel also imparted prestige when they left.

Someone who had only swept floors was still seen as special, more holy, and more knowledgeable than other JWs.

Sexual promiscuity at Bethel occurred but was not common. Before 1976 there were cases of fornication and adultery but after 1976, with more women at Bethel, both occurred more frequently. Homosexual offences also occurred, facilitated by the WTS's long-standing near-prohibition of marriage among Bethelites. Nathan Knorr preached about the evils of "men lying with men" and regularly kept the issues of homosexuality and masturbation before the workers.

On one occasion in the early 1970s when a male worker was disfellowshipped and expelled for pederasty Knorr described the seduction so graphically at the meal table that many were revolted. Some former Bethelites who have shared their story on the Internet admitted that they had to leave Bethel after committing adultery or fornication there.

Alcohol sometimes caused problems. Pastor Russell was both vegetarian and teetotaller. Rutherford, however, drank and considered America's Prohibition period a plot by the Devil and the clergy. After 1929 Watch Tower officials at Brooklyn often had officials at the Canadian Branch in Toronto smuggle liquor across the border to them. Drinking became part of a cult of machismo into which new workers were inducted.

After Rutherford's death, drinking continued at Bethel and many WTS officials had cabinets stocked with liquors they served to favoured guests. Many Bethelites drank regularly on a social basis and some became problem-drinkers.

Institutional strictness, poverty, and lack of emotional warmth caused emotional stress to many Bethelites. Those who spoke out or showed their feelings were BA's — workers with bad attitudes — and were reported to superiors by extreme loyalists.

Workers were paid a pittance and often short of money unless receiving support from families. Governing Body members and other high officials often got sizeable gifts from the outside JWs community. Some poorer workers found night-time employment outside of Bethel. Referred to as "jobbers" they were reprimanded if discovered and even dismissed from Bethel.

What William Schnell called a "spy system" was in place and anything perceived as dissent or disloyalty brought repercussions. There were petty politics and personal rivalry as in any authoritarian, quasi-monastic, bureaucratic situation.

BETHEL LIFE IN THE 1920s to 1950s

Bethel means "house of God" and refers to the Society's branches together with accommodation and other facilities.

In 1928 *The Messenger* (a WBTS newspaper) reported *A Proxy Trip Through Bethel and the Factory*. (1928, July 31)

The article described "Bethel" at 124 Columbia Heights, New York which was the living and eating quarters of staff and workers. An accompanying photo shows a drab seven-story building. (See: *BROOKLYN BETHEL — 1920s*)

Visitors, according to *The Messenger*, were not permitted because visiting constitutes "loafing". Each inmate received one key, and if he lost it, "He never gets another." Bedrooms were each 12 x18 feet with two windows, two metal beds, two indestructible chairs, two study tables, a metal bin, a wash basin and a radiator.

Everyone was kept busy from 6.30 a.m. to 10.30 p.m.

Rutherford was accessible only by appointment. The front door opened automatically upon ringing the bell. The visitor walked up steps to a lobby where a "businesslike young woman wishes know his business." After further screening by the "home manager" the visitor took an automatic elevator to Rutherford's quarters on the seventh floor.

The building had two stairways with handrails built to last: "They ought still to be in good condition when Abraham takes over the premisses."

On the ground floor was a parlor with automatic piano, four rugs, one radio, a coffee table and 12 chairs. Close by was the library with 500 books, a music room and an empty two-room hospital. It was nearly always empty because:

> The regular house treatment of the sick is the common sense one of an enema, complete rest from food, and plenty of lemon juice and fresh air. (The Messenger 1928, July 31, p.5)

Below the ground floor was the dining room with six tables, each with 36 seats. Every Bethelite had his seat assigned by Rutherford. Meals were in silence except for questions and answers mediated by Rutherford. A photo

shows five of the tables and the dining room crammed with about 170 people. Only Rutherford has a microphone. Rutherford and Van Amburgh are next to each other, each at the head of a separate table. (Van Amburgh still has his beard although Rutherford all-but-banned beards two years before.) Future WTS president, Nathan Knorr, is fourth along Rutherford's table on his right. Fred Franz is possibly ninth on the left.

By means of his microphone, according to other reports, Rutherford would cheer the Bethelites with reminders that "The clergy are hypocrites", make requests such as "Please pass the toast", and occasionally criticise complainers followed by "All who are in agreement please stand." Of course everyone would stand.

Newcomers to Bethel received a rulebook. The version used in the 1930s had 72 rules. In the 1980s there were over 1000 rules.

Conditions, especially medical treatment improved in the 1950s and 1960s. Some Bethelites were shifted from job to job without notice or explanation. Others did humdrum work such as window cleaning for decades. In some cases the monthly money allowance did not cover travel costs to and from congregations. Anyone who criticized or otherwise showed a B.A. [bad attitude] was dismissed on short notice.

The Governing Body (and other top personnel) had private apartments, drove Society-owned cars serviced by Bethelite workers, and jetted first-class around the world, and stayed in top-class hotels.

BETHEL SERVICE
"Bethel service" is work as a live-in volunteer at the WTS's headquarters in the USA or at a branch office or on a WTS farm.

Bethel service is often the next step up from pioneering. For males it ranks at the same level as congregation overseer but below the position of circuit overseer.

BETHEL VOLUNTEERS
These are live-in volunteer workers at headquarters, usually selected from among pioneers.

Food and accommodation are supplied plus a monthly allowance for personal needs. This was $20 in the 1920s, $15 in the 1930s, $10 in the 1940s, and $14 in the $1950s and 1960s. Two weeks vacation is taken annually in the same month each year. Weekly work consists of five 8-hour days plus Saturday mornings.

Overtime is offered and the mature attitude is to accept willingly with appreciation. In 1942, for example, work overtime consisted of 128 evenings and 20 Saturday afternoons. (Yearbook 1943, 27-28)

Evenings and Sundays are used for meetings and door to door work. Full time proselytising is the recommended way to use the two-week annual vacation.

In the 1920s-1940s visiting businessmen on guided tours sometimes asked, "How can you get people to work like that?" The secret was that Armageddon was supposedly only months away and "slackers" would then be punished.

Old Bethelites work reduced hours and donate their pensions to the Organization. Officially all Bethelites work with joy all the time:

> …all the members of the Bethel family in the Bethel home and on the farms enjoy their daily labors in the home, or factory, or office or in the fields. (Yearbook 1960, 69)

BETHELITE
Bethelites are JWs who live and work at the WTS's branch offices and farms. They receive room and board and a monthly allowance. Brooklyn headquarters had about 3000 Bethelites in the late 20th century.

(See: *BETHEL*)

BEYOND THE GRAVE (1934)
Booklet by Rutherford.

BHUTAN
Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bhutan and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
2015	3	258,000	7	111,000

BIBLE DICTIONARY
The WTS has published two Bible dictionaries:
- *Aid to Bible Understanding* (1971)
- *Insight on the Scriptures* (1988) in 2 volumes

WTS publications occasionally cite other Bible dictionaries if they find a quote that supports something that JWs believe. However, JWs are

discouraged from directly using such sources and are taught to regard them as unreliable.

BIBLE DRAMA
An on-stage play performed at JWs conventions in which local JWs depict Bible characters or characters from modern-day life.

The "dramas" teach the same moral lessons as commonly appear in the publications such as obedience to the Organization, not missing out on salvation when Armageddon is so close, and avoiding false religion, immorality, blood transfusions and drugs. The words are usually pre-recorded using JWs with acting ability, and pantomimed by the local "actors". Bible Dramas are highlights of the conventions.

BIBLE EDUCATION
"Bible education" refers to the totality of contemporary JWs beliefs. The phrase appears on the *WT Library* (2007) CD 2569 times.

Even in 1917, when *The Finished Mystery* contained 1300 interpretations of Biblical verses different to current interpretations, the WTS work was "Bible education". (Your Will Be Done On Earth 1958, 181)

The Governing Body routinely sum up the doctrines they publish through the WTS, including the failed prophecies and other errors, as "education" and "Bible Education". This promotes the impression that it is all objective and unsectarian like education in schools — like arithmetic, grammar, history, computer-use, geography, spelling, physics, biology, etc.

Nazi propaganda is said to have "bastardised" the German language when for example the regime murdered millions of people and called its activity "decent" or when it still predicted "victory" when Russian armies were in Berlin and the Americans 100 km away. The Governing Body similarly misuses hundreds of languages by mislabelling and redefining common concepts.

A person is not "educated" in *The Bible* but indoctrinated if he studies the publications of only one sect, publications which:

- Tell him what various Bible verses mean but keep getting it wrong;
- Are regularly discarded or revised with every major doctrine affected;
- Continually glorify the spiritual superiority and accuracy of the leaders.

(See more detail under: *BIBLE STUDY*)

BIBLE EDUCATIONAL WORK
A phrase in use since at least 1950 and listed 162 times on *Watchtower Library* (2007) CD. It refers to the JWs preaching and proselytizing activity.

BIBLE EXAMINER
A religious journal started by George Storrs in Albany, New York, in 1842. The *Bible Examiner* was published intermittently until 1847 when it became a monthly. In 1863 its publication ceased but was revived in 1871.

This journal influenced C.T. Russell in the 1870s and published his article, *The Gentile Times: When Do They End?* (October 1876)

A review of Barbour's and Russell's book *Three Worlds* (1877) in *Bible Examiner (*July 1877) criticized their prediction that the living saints will rise to heaven in 1878:

> A few months will determine the accuracy of the ground he has taken as to the withdrawal of the saints from the earth.

And again in October 1877:

> I object to the time setting in any limited period, because I believe it is a disregard of our Lord's teaching on the subject, and the disappointments of the past…

The critics were right and the founder of the Watchtower, C.T. Russell, was wrong, misguided, false and even stupid, and took offence at being corrected, and embarked on a life of convincing himself by convincing others.

BIBLE FELLOWSHIP UNION
1. A British continuation of Russellism based in Hounslow, Middlesex, England, and publishers of the journal *Bible Study Monthly* which began in 1924.

2. A retirement home, established in Dorset in 1978, known as Gainsborough House, which accommodated members of the sect and produced a pamphlet called *Gainsborough Journal*.

BIBLE HOUSE
A four-story brick building at 56-60 Arch Street, Alleghany, acquired in 1889, which functioned as Russell's headquarters from 1889 to 1908.



The building was valued at $34,000 and legally owned by Tower Publishing Company, a company which Russell used for his private interests and which also published literature for the WBTS.

Ownership of Bible House was transferred to the WBTS in 1898 and sold in 1908.

Whether Russell sold Bible House and set up his new headquarters in New York to avoid alimony and defraud his wife, or sold it and moved because it had become too small is debated. Both reasons could be true.

BIBLE ON HELL, THE (1923)
Booklet by Rutherford.

BIBLE PRINCIPLES
General rules of conduct for JWs as set forth in WTS publications, citing the Scriptures as authority.

BIBLE READING
See: *BIBLE STUDY*

BIBLE SCHOOL FOR CHRISTIAN COUPLES
A two-month school started in July 2011 for English speaking JWs who have been in fulltime service for at least two years. (Yearbook 2012, 13-14)

BIBLE SCHOOL FOR SINGLE BROTHERS
A two-month school for unmarried elders and ministerial servants. It was previously named Ministerial Training School and renamed in October 2010. By late 2011 some 37,400 had been enrolled. (Yearbook 2012, 13)

BIBLE STUDENTS
The Russellites and breakaway splinter groups all called themselves "Bible Students" as also do JWs:

> Jehovah's Witnesses, who are recognized even by their critics as excellent Bible students, have found that the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures admirably meets the requirements of clarity and accuracy. (w1985 6 /15 5)

JWs, however, are not so much Bible students as students of WTS publications — the latter get 95% of the typical JW's study effort.

JWs are obliged to accept every new interpretation of their leaders or be disfellowshipped. Few JWs use Bible dictionaries or concordances; few do research to find something new; few are able to explain official doctrines in depth; few know much history of their religion; and few have checked the alleged "true" prophecies in their old publications.

In many instances JWs preached false prophecy and/or other errors and called it "Bible truth", but discontinued immediately after the WTS published "new truth". The Bible during such episodes did not change, which suggests that JWs did not "study the Bible" or get their "truth" from it but studied the source that misguided and deceived them.

BIBLE STUDENTS
The name by which the followers of C.T. Russell and J.F. Rutherford often referred to themselves until abandoned in 1931 in favor of "Jehovah's witnesses".

Many groups who remained loyal to Russell's teachings and rejected Rutherford's innovations retained "Bible Students" in their names e.g. "Chicago Bible Students", "Dawn Bible Students", "Berean Bible Students", etc.

The term "Bible Students"

The term "Bible Students" was sparingly used before 1905 and came into vogue in 1906.

Russell's followers did not think of themselves as a religious "movement" — their goal was merely to disseminate Russell's doctrines until they went to heaven in or near 1914 when also

the governments and religions would perish.

The concept of a "Bible Student movement" probably developed during the 1920s when various splinter groups got organized under the general label "Bible Students".

During the latter years of Russell's lifetime critics often referred to his sect as "Russellites" and "followers of [Pastor] Russell". The name "Millennial Dawn" or "Millennial Dawnists" came into use when the Millennial Dawn series or *Studies in the Scriptures* reached Volume VI.

In 1884 Russell expressed preference for the term "Christians" but during the next 20 years he also used other terms such as "little flock", "the consecrated" and "God's people".

International Bible Students Association

In 1910 Russell introduced the name International Bible Students Association to identify his sect. He wrote:

> Now in the Lord's providence we have thought of a title suitable, we believe, to the Lord's people everywhere, and free from objection, we believe, on every score—the title at the head of this article (IBSA). It fairly represents our sentiments and endeavors.
>
> We are Bible students. We welcome all of God's people to join with us in the study. We believe that the result of such studies is blessed and unifying. We recommend therefore that the little classes everywhere and the larger ones adopt this unobjectionable style and that they use it in the advertising columns of their newspapers.
>
> Thus friends everywhere will know how to recognize them when visiting strange cities. (wr1910 4/1 5493)

Russell explained that the IBSA would be directed and managed by the Peoples Pulpit Association which, in turn, represented the WBTS. All Bible Student classes using WBTS publications could identify themselves by the name "International Bible Students Association".

BIBLE STUDENTS MOVEMENT

Researchers refer to the religious groups that emerged from the ministry of C.T. Russell and split from WTS control between 1909 and 1932 collectively as the "Bible Students Movement".

The most significant split began in 1917 after Rutherford's election as president of the WBTS, the publication of *The Finished Mystery*, and Rutherford's dismissal of four of the WBTS's board of directors.

About 20% of the "Bible Students" of 1914 had left by 1920. Most of them joined one of the newly organized groups of "Bible Students".

Most of the members who still remained with the WBTS in 1920 left by 1931. Their exit was prompted by Rutherford's failed predictions for the year 1925, his on-going doctrinal and organizational changes, and his centralization of control and authority in himself.

By 1931 about 80% of the WWI membership had left (but been replaced with new converts).

Rutherford's book *Jehovah* (1934) says: "Of the great multitude that left the world to follow after Christ Jesus only a few are now in God's organization." (p.277)

To distinguish the WTS's people from splinter groups Rutherford adopted the name "Jehovah's witnesses" in July, 1931.

Confirming the great loss of faith in the WTS are figures published in the 1950s revealing that about 90,000 attended the Memorial in 1925 but only 23,988 in 1928. (Your Will, 1958, p.337; Yearbook 1958, p.284)

The *Your Will* book (1958) says "Some stopped waiting and went with the world". This implies they had acted from bad motives, whereas they had merely reacted to the false prophecies for 1925-1926 by abandoning the false prophets.

By 1931 the main factions independent of Rutherford and the WBTS included the:

- New Covenant believers
- Pastoral Bible Institute
- Standfast Bible Students Association
- Laymen's Home Missionary Movement
- Dawn Bible Students Association

The Bible Students groups together outnumbered Rutherford's "Jehovah's witnesses" until about 1940. Today the Bible Student Movement still exists and has been estimated at 75,000 members worldwide.

New Covenant Believers

In 1905 Paul S.L. Johnson, one of Russell's traveling "pilgrim" speakers, pointed out that Russell had changed his doctrine on the New Covenant. Until 1880 Russell had taught that the New Covenant would be inaugurated after the 144,000 had all gone to heaven. But since

1881 he had taught that the New Covenant was already in force. In January 1907 Russell wrote Watch Tower articles reaffirming his 1880 position that "the new covenant belongs exclusively to the coming age".

[Note: Hebrews Chapter 8 in the Bible suggests the New Covenant was in force in the 1st century. See the entry: *NEW COVENANT*]

In 1909, M.L. McPhail, a traveling "Pilgrim" of the Chicago Bible Students and A.E. Williamson of Brooklyn, disassociated from Russell's movement over Russell's new view of the New Covenant and founded the New Covenant Believers. They published *The Kingdom Scribe* magazine until 1975. The group still continues as the Berean Bible Students Church.

In Australia most of Russell's followers left Russell's sect and formed the New Covenant Fellowship.

Post-1917 divisions

On January 6, 1917, Joseph Franklin Rutherford was elected president of the WBTS. By-laws passed by the board of directors increased Rutherford's power by affirming that the president would be the executive officer and general manager of the society with full authority of its affairs worldwide. Rutherford then announced publication of *The Finished Mystery*, which he claimed was Russell's posthumous Volume 7 of *Studies in the Scriptures*.

In June four of the seven directors — Robert H. Hirsh, Alfred I. Ritchie, Isaac F. Hoskins and James D. Wright — decided they had erred in endorsing Rutherford's expanded powers.

Hirsch wanted the new by-laws rescinded, and Rutherford later claimed there was a conspiracy by the directors to seize control of the WBTS. In July he obtained a legal opinion from a Philadelphia lawyer that the four were not legally directors. On July 12, Rutherford filled the four vacancies with men of his choice, A.H. Macmillan, W.E. Spill, J.A. Bohnet and George H. Fisher.

The former directors were escorted by police from the Brooklyn headquarters on August 8. The ousted directors and the WBTS published pamphlets in which each side accused the other of ambitious and dishonest conduct.

On January 5, 1918 Rutherford was returned to office.

Pastoral Bible Institute

In 1918, the former directors founded the Pastoral Bible Institute and began publishing *The Herald of Christ's Kingdom*, edited by R. E. Streeter.

Berean Bible Institute

The Berean Bible Institute (BBI) was founded in Australia in 1918 and published *The Voice* and the *People's Paper* magazine. BBI congregations still exist although membership in Australia is now probably below 100.

Bible Students Association

In December 1918, Charles E. Heard and supporters considered Rutherford's indifference to the purchase of war bonds by Bible Students to be contrary to Russell's pacifism and founded the Standfast Bible Students Association in Portland, Oregon, USA.

The name represented their decision to "stand fast" on principles that Russell had taught. Membership dwindled and the group eventually disbanded.

Some continued as the Elijah Voice Society founded by John A. Herdersen and C.D. McCray in 1923 and preached neutrality and pacifism.

Laymen's Home Missionary Movement

Paul S.L. Johnson founded the Laymen's Home Missionary Movement in 1919. His death in 1950 resulted in new splinter groups:

- Epiphany Bible Students Association;
- Laodicean Home Missionary Movement.

Johnson claimed God appointed him as Russell's spiritual successor and that he was the last member of the 144,000 and with his death the hope of heavenly immortality would cease.

Johnson's successor, Raymond Jolly claimed to be the last member of the "great multitude".

After Jolly's death, the remaining members of the group believed they would live on a paradise Earth as "modern worthies" i.e. as associates of the ancient Jewish heroes whom God would resurrect.

Friends of Man

Alexander F.L. Freytag was the manager of the WBTS branch office in Switzerland from 1898. He began publishing dissenting views using the WBTS's printing equipment in 1917 and was removed by Rutherford in 1919.

In 1920, Freytag founded the Angel of Jehovah Bible and Tract Society, also known as the Philanthropic Assembly of the Friends of Man and The Church of the Kingdom of God. He published two journals, *The Monitor of the Reign of Justice* (a monthly journal) and the *Paper for All* (weekly).

Christian Millennial Fellowship

In 1928 the Italian Bible Students Association in Hartford, Connecticut, withdrew support from the WBTS and changed their name to Millennial Bible Students Church, later Christian Millennial Fellowship.

They published *The New Creation* magazine commencing in 1940 and eventually rejected many of Russell's teachings. Now located in New Jersey, the group is known as the Free Bible Students.

Dawn Bible Students

The largest breakaway from WBTS control is the Dawn Bible Students.

In 1928, Norman Woodworth, cousin of Clayton J. Woodworth who edited *The Golden Age*, left the WTS after having been in charge of its radio ministry.

Woodworth funded by Brooklyn Bible Students created the radio program *Frank and Ernest*.

In 1931 Woodworth and supporters founded the Dawn Bible Students Association to publish Russell's *Studies in the Scriptures* which the WTS stopped printing in 1927.

In the 1970s the editorial committee of the Dawn Bible Students Association began to distance themselves from Russell's teachings.

Therefore in 1974, a group in Colorado ceased fellowship and became the "Independent Bible Students".

The Dawn branch numbered over 50,000 worldwide in the 1980s.

Many more

Many more splinter groups broke off from JWs during and after the 1930s. A prominent offshoot is God's Kingdom Society founded in 1934, based in Nigeria. In Rumania True Faith Jehovah's Witnesses separated in 1990.

(See: *DIVISIONS/SPLINTER GROUPS*)

BIBLE STUDENTS MANUAL PART 1 (1909)

A book of over 500 pages compiled by senior members of Russell's cult (mainly C.J. Woodworth) explaining every Bible verse that Russell commented on along with references to Russell's publications. For example Genesis 1:1:

GENESIS	
1:1 In the beginning…	Not of the universe but of our planet F17
God created…	Prepared for the work of the six creative days F18

"F" is the 6th letter of the alphabet and means Russell's 6th volume of *Studies in the Scriptures*.

BIBLE STUDENTS MONTHLY, THE

The successor publication to the *Peoples Pulpit*.

BIBLE STUDENTS TRACT SOCIETY

An Australian organization formed in May 1918 in protest against Rutherford's:

- False predictions;
- Repudiation of Russell's Will and Testament;
- Abusive language in *The Finished Mystery* (1917).

The group published *The Peoples Paper* with the intention of sticking closely to Russell's doctrines.

BIBLE STUDY

Russell introduced the policy whereby his followers studied his books instead of the Bible, claiming that straight-out Bible reading leads "into darkness":

> Others, more crafty, indirectly discourage the use of the Society's publications while, in a sense, praising them, and if questioned, are obliged to acknowledge that the Society's literature was the channel through which the Lord sent them practically all that they know about the Bible and the divine purposes. They seek to turn the minds of the enlightened ones in another direction by telling them that "each should dig" the jewels of divine truth for himself; that the Society's publications merely gave them the start on which they should improve, so that eventually its teachings would be far in the background. <u>These disloyal "fellow servants"</u> suggest further that there is danger of worshipping the Society and that to avoid so doing it is practically necessary to give it a kick or

to turn their backs upon it. They say, Let us have a Bible study, but let us exclude the Society's publications! Let us give the impression that we are great Bible students and teachers who dug these Truths for ourselves. But let us put the matter more plausibly and more humbly by claiming that our only desire is to exalt God's Word and to study it alone…

… the "Dawn Scripture Study" Volumes are practically the Bible itself in an arranged, systematic form; and that it is this very systematization of the Bible which brought them [members of Russell's cult] to their present enlightenment and joy in the holy spirit. (wr1909 10/1 4482, 4283)

Furthermore, not only do we find that people cannot see the divine plan in studying the Bible by itself, but we see, also, that if anyone lays the SCRIPTURE STUDIES aside, even after he has used them, after he has become familiar with them, after he has read them for ten years—if he then lays them aside and ignores them and goes to the Bible alone, though he has understood the Bible for ten years, our experience shows that within two years he goes into darkness… We would conclude, practically, that we could not understand anything about the Bible except it was revealed. We would, therefore, not waste a great deal of time doing what we know some people do, reading chapter after chapter, to no profit. (w1910 9/15 298; wr1910 9/15 4685)

JW "Bible study"

In the 1930s JWs rejected Russell's *Studies in the Scriptures* and today don't read them because hundreds of teachings therein have been revised. Russell's claim that his books provide better understanding of the Bible than the Bible itself, turned out to be pompous, self-glorifying, and wrong.

Yet JWs learned nothing from Russell's failure. They continued to study WTS publications (instead of the Bible) and call this activity "Bible study". The Governing Body copies Russell in claiming that studying the Bible by itself cannot give the understanding that leads to salvation:

Jehovah's organization as directed by his "faithful and discreet slave" class should influence our every decision also. How may we avail ourselves of this good influence? By doing personal research in the Bible publications of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society on whatever subject our decision concerns. (w1969 3/15 172)

They say that it is sufficient to read the Bible exclusively, either alone or in small groups at home. But, strangely, through such 'Bible reading,' they have reverted right back to the apostate doctrines that commentaries by Christendom's clergy were teaching 100 years ago…(w1981 8/15 28-29)

Jehovah God has also provided his visible organization, his 'faithful and discreet slave,' made up of spirit-anointed ones, to help Christians in all nations to understand and apply properly the Bible in their lives. Unless we are in touch with this channel of communication that God is using, we will not progress along the road to life, no matter how much Bible reading we do. (w1981 11/15 21)

…to understand the Bible today, you also need to receive guidance from representatives of God's true congregation. (w1984 8/15 9)

Let us face the fact that no matter how much Bible reading we have done, we would never have learned the truth on our own. (w1990 12/1 19)

Just as Rutherford discarded hundreds of Russell's Bible "truths" in the 1920s, so too were hundreds more "Bible truths" that "Jehovah God has provided" discarded after Rutherford's time and is still happening.

Rutherford's angels

Rutherford taught that angels deliver God's instructions to the "remnant" class who then publish these instructions in WTS publications:

These angels are invisible to human eyes and are there to carry out the orders of the Lord. No doubt they first hear the instruction which the Lord issues to his remnant and then these invisible messengers pass such instruction on to the remnant. (Vindication III 1932, 250)

The Bible, however, does not tell people to rely on sectarian leaders and their supposed angelic guidance but says:

All **Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching** … that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good

work. (II Timothy 3:16-17; Compare 1 John 2:26-27)

BIBLE STUDY(IES)
"Bible studies" or "Home Bible studies" refer to persons who are taught the JWs religion on a regular basis. The "study" usually takes place in the person's home on a weekly basis. A WTS book is used and occasional passages in the Bible are looked up. The intention is to convert the "student" and convince him to join JWs.

In the 1950s and 1960s some studies continued for 20 years. In 1969 studies were limited to six months but continued longer if the householder manifested "progress". After 1975 studies lasting longer than six months again became fashionable even without significant progress toward conversion.

"Bible studies" statistics declined after Armageddon failed to occur in 1975 and when "this generation" was redefined in 1995:

Average Bible Studies World Wide

1945	104,000	2009	7,619,000
1950	235,000	2010	8,058,000
1955	337,000	2011	8,491,000
1960	640,000	2012	8,760,000
1965	771,000	2013	9,255,000
1970	1,146,000	2014	9,500,000
1975	1,411,000	2015	9,709,000
1980	1,372,000	2016	10,115,000
1985	2,379,000	2017	10,072,000
1990	3,624,000	2018	10,080,000
1995	4,865,000	2019	9,618,000
2000	4,767,000	2020	7,706,000
2002	5,309,000	2021	5,908,000
2004	6,085,000	2022	5,557,000
2005	6,062,000	2023	7,281,000
2006	6,287,000	2024	7,480,000
2007	6,561,000	2025	7,603,000
2008		2026	

BIBLE TEACHING(S)
JWs call their doctrines, discourses and content of their publications "Bible teaching" and "true Christian teaching". The former phrase appears over 370 times on the *Watchtower Library* (2007) CD.

BIBLE TOPICS FOR DISCUSSION
A small booklet released in 1961; also called *Sermon Outlines*.

BIBLE TRUTH
Rutherford summed up Russell's writings as "Bible truth":

> Neither Pastor Russell nor his fellow believers were permitted to utter the Bible Truth before the congregations of ecclesiasticism. (The Finished Mystery 1917, 390)

Rutherford used the phrase "Bible truth" only occasionally but his successors made it popular and routinely used it to sum-up all of the JWs doctrines and teachings.

"Bible truth" does not appear in *The Watchtower* of 1930 and 1940 but is listed 2140 times in the *Watchtower Library* CD (2007) which has *The Watchtower* from 1950 and other publications from 1970.

JWs leaders still call Russellism "Bible truth" even though they have altered up to 80% of Russell's interpretations.

JWs leaders also call their current ideas "truth" and "Bible truth". The phrase "the truth" is listed 10,095 times on the *Watchtower Library* CD (2007). The word "truth" sometimes occurs ten times in a short article (e.g. w1985 5/15 27-31).

Repetition is a means by which the JWs leaders indoctrinate their followers. They never speak of "our present-day interpretations" or "what we currently believe" because they do not distinguish their interpretations or their beliefs from truth — WTS teaching is always "the truth" or "Bible truth". This is policy despite their past published writings containing thousands of statements and interpretations that contradict current "truth". (See: *ERROR*)

BIBLE VERSUS EVOLUTION, THE (1898)
A booklet authored by Russell which presented a dialogue between "A" and "B" where B argues that the Bible and evolution are in conflict.

Crucial to B's argument is that mankind is degenerating. The booklet finishes with the following evidence which JWs cited for the next 80 years:

RELIABLE AND CORROBORATIVE EVIDENCE THAT THE HEAD AND BRAINS OF MODERN MEN ARE SMALLER THAN WERE THOSE OF THE ANCIENTS

> *Popular Science Monthly*, for December I898, in an article discussing "Brain Weight and Intellectual Capacity" furnishes the following items.

Discussing the *average* of brain weights furnished by various doctors, some claiming 49 ounces and others as high as 55.4, it says, "If we strike a balance between the highest and the lowest of these estimates, *the mean will be 52.2" ounces*. Then after reminding us that the brain of Daniel Webster was but 55.3 ounces and that of the celebrated Frenchman, Gambetta, weighed less than 41 ounces, it quotes and comments thus:-

"The St. Louis *Globe Democrat* of November 13, 1885, gives an account of some excavations on Mount Ararat farm, east of Carrollton, Illinois, where the bones of thirty two Indians or mound builders were unearthed. 'They were not a diminutive race**,** as some people have supposed, some of the thigh bones being sixteen inches long and of the skulls twenty four inches in circumference.' A skull having a circumference of twenty four-inches means a head that measured from twenty-five to twenty-six and a half in life, when the cranium was covered with skin and muscles. The average head of white men in New York to-day is only twenty two and a half inches round. So the culture of the white race for centuries bat not developed their head near the size of those of the uncultured mound builders who inhabited America many centuries ago.

"The Engisskull is one of the most ancient known to exist, and belonged to the stone age, or about the same time as the Neanderthal skull. Professor Huxley describes it as being formed, and considerably larger than the average of European skulls to-day in the width and height of the forehead and in the cubic capacity of the whole.

"These facts all conspire to prove that the cultivation of thousands of fears has not increased the size of human skulls. In 1886 we measured many if the skulls unearthed at Pompeii, the remains of Romans who lived nearly two thousand years ago, and we found them on the average larger in every way, hut specially in the forehead, than the skulls of Romans of this century.

"In the museums of Switzerland we measured in 1887 several skulls of the ancient lake dwellers of that country, and found them larger in all respects, but particularly in the forehead, than those of the Swiss People of the last fifty years.

"The average circumference of the skulls we measured in the catacombs of Paris was twenty-one inches and a half, which is about an inch more than that of Parisians who have died within the past fifty years."

We submit that these evidences attested by the savants of our day, very generally believers in the Evolution theory, do not uphold their contention. Rather, they agree with our view, the Scriptural one, that originally man had greater *capacity* than to-day, while to-day we have larger *education*—knowledge has increased, capacity has decreased. (pp 46-47)

BIBLE, THE

The Bible is Christianity's main textbook comprising the Old Testament (Hebrew Scriptures) and the New Testament (Greek Scriptures). The Bible is available in whole or part in over 2400 languages.

The WTS sold (but did not publish or print) *Tischendorf's New Testament* (1883), *Rotherham's New Testament* (1896), *Holman Linear Bible* (1901), *The Emphatic Diaglott* (1902), and the *Bible Students King James Version* (1907).

The WTS printed **and** sold *Berean Bible* (1926), *The Emphatic Diaglott* (1942), *American Standard Version* (1944), *The Bible in Living English* (1972), and *The Holy Bible For The Deaf* (1993)

The WTS published its *New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures* (1951) followed by portions of the Hebrew Scriptures in the 1950s and the complete *New World Translation* in 1961. Revised editions, large-print editions, editions with references, and pocket editions came out sequentially. The *Kingdom Interlinear* (1969) is the New Testament with the English wording beneath the Greek.

Comparisons

The WTS began printing Bibles in 1926. By 1960 Bibles and Bible-portions printed numbered 5,977,000. (w1960 10/1 600) From 1942 to 1984 about 60 million were printed of which 20 million were sold to the public.

In comparison the British and Foreign Bible Society distributed 204 million copies in 1804-1906; and Gideons International distributed 2,000,000,000 (two billion) Scriptures between 1899 and 2015. (Wikipedia)

Regarding *The New World Translation*: In whole or in part 222 million copies were printed 1950-2017 in 160 languages. (Wikipedia)

Christianity in contrast had by 2017 translated the entire Bible into 670 languages, the entire New Testament into 1521 languages, and parts of the Bible into a further 1121 languages. (Wikipedia)

The various Bible Societies together distributed 428 million "Scriptures" including 34 million "full Bibles" in just one year — 2014. (Wikipedia)

Direct Bible study?

JWs leaders advocate "going direct to God's Word":

> Men not only contradict God, they contradict one another. How can they be reliable guides—unless their words are based on God's words? But how can you know whether they are or not? By going directly to God's Word as your source of authority. Search for yourself and let God be true! (g1963 3/22 32)

Thousands of revised interpretations prove the JWs leaders do not follow their own advice. Each generation of leaders contradicts the previous generation — "they contradict one another." JWs who actually follow the above advice and seriously "go directly to God's Word" are soon disfellowshipped.
(See: *APOSTATES*; BEROEANS; *NEW WORLD TRANSLATION; BIBLE STUDY*)

WTS leaders from Russell onwards claimed that the Bible is "inspired by God" and that all WTS teachings come from it. They also claim that the Bible cannot be understood without using WTS publications. Russell started this approach and argued that the Bible cannot be understood without his books. In a choice between his books and the Bible it was better to leave the Bible unread:

> Furthermore, not only do we find that people cannot see the divine plan in studying the Bible by itself, but we see also, that if anyone lays the SCRIPTURE STUDIES aside, even after he has used them, after he has become familiar with them, after he has read them for ten years—if he then lays them aside and ignores them and goes to the Bible alone, though he has understood his Bible for ten years, our experience shows that within two years he goes into darkness. On the other hand, if he had merely read the SCRIPTURE STUDIES with their references, and had not read a page of the Bible, as such, he would be in the light at the end of the two years, because be would have the light of the Scriptures…
>
> …if he [God] had some further in formation for us he would bring it to our attention in some way; therefore we would not see the necessity of reading the New Testament every day or every year; we would not consider that necessary. We would consider that the Scripture which says, "They shall he all be taught of God," would imply that in his own appointed way God would bring to our attention whatever feature of divine truth would be "meat in due season for the household of faith."…
>
> "THEY SHALL BE ALL TAUGHT OF GOD"
>
> We would conclude, practically, that we could not understand anything about the Bible except as it was revealed. We would, therefore, not waste a great deal of time doing what we know some people do, reading chapter after chapter, to no profit. We would not think of doing it. We would not think we were studying the Scriptures at all. We would think we were following the course that had been anything but profitable to ourselves and many others in past—merely reading over the Scriptures. (wr1910 9/15 4685)

The above implies that Russell's teachings cannot be found in the Bible — and indeed subsequent WTS leaders rejected or revised most of Russell's theology. (See: *ERROR*)

Nevertheless, Russell's successors in the WTS copied him in disparaging reliance on the Bible. Their reason is the same as Russell's — because direct Bible study makes people go: "...right back to the apostate doctrines…" (w1981 8/15 28-29)

This again is indirect admission that a lot of WTS "truth" is not in the Bible. After Rutherford's death in 1942 hundreds of Rutherford's interpretations also were progressively altered. After the death of Frederick Franz (1992) much so-called "Bible truth" was again dumped. Indeed the entire "remnant of the 144,000" has been ousted from their positions of "the faithful and discreet slave class" and Jehovah's modern-day prophet the equivalent of Jeremiah! It would be hard to imagine greater revisions than these!

Yet the Governing Body still promotes the old slogan that "…the Bible is their only creed." (g1935 10/23 37) The inside front cover of *The Watchtower* says: "It adheres to the Bible as its authority."

Prior to 1981 the corresponding claim in the

inside front cover was: "Since it began publication in 1879, 'The Watchtower' has held faithfully to God's Word as its authority." And prior to 1973 the claim was that *The Watchtower* represented: "Not the confused religions of Christendom, but the religion of the oldest sacred Book on earth."

Numerous failed prophecies, including specific dates, and thousands of changed interpretations expose the *Watchtower*'s faithful adherence since 1879 "to God's Word as its authority" or to the Bible as "their only creed" to be bombastic lies and JWs "a very confused religion".
(See: *DATES; ERROR; THE FINISHED MYSTERY*)

BIBLE, WHY BELIEVE THE

The *Awake!* article *Should Archaeology Make You Doubt The Bible?* (g1983 7/8 6-11) is typical of JWs efforts to defend the Bible.

The article discusses archaeological debate over the Red Sea crossing during the Exodus and says:

> Are Christians to believe that major portions of the Bible are just 'literary masterpieces' with no relationship to "factual experience"? Or can they rely on the Bible as the inspired Word of God? Should we be swayed by the conflicting theories of archaeologists and scholars? Or should we accept as reliable the testimony of the Bible writers and Jesus Christ himself? (p.9)

The *Awake!* article then quotes the Bible that "All Scripture is inspired" and continues:

> Why, then, do Jehovah's Witnesses believe the Bible to be inspired? Does their faith depend on archaeological findings? Briefly, the proof for inspiration is found in the Bible itself, not in archaeology. It is one thing to write accurate history; it is another to write accurate history *in advance*. That is prophecy. The Bible contains hundreds of fulfilled prophecies attesting to its divine authorship. For example, it has been estimated that 332 distinct prophecies of the Hebrew Scriptures were fulfilled in Jesus Christ alone.
>
> Another powerful support of the Bible's authenticity is that its testimony is based on accounts supplied by actual eyewitnesses of the events, often the writer himself. This is the case with the Exodus account written by Moses himself. Do we have any reason to doubt his honesty as a witness? No, not when we also acknowledge that he was divinely inspired to write. (p.10)
>
> Therefore, the reasonable Christian will not expect absolute proof from archaeology for everything stated in the Bible, especially in this imperfect system of things. Nevertheless, he knows the time will soon come when it will be possible to check out perfectly so many of the persons and events related in the Bible. How so? "Because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his [Jesus Christ"] voice and come out."(p.11)

This above reasoning is typical of JWs apologetics and common in other religions.

The appeal to the "reliable testimony … of Jesus Christ" assumes without proof that Jesus gave the "testimony" that we read in the Gospels and that it's reliable. Even if we could prove Jesus gave it, which we can't, non-Christians would still need proof that Jesus was correct.

Regarding the so-called, "332 distinct prophecies … fulfilled in Jesus":
No so-called prophecy names Jesus or gives dates for his existence or even refers to other alleged Old Testament prophecies to assure readers that the various "prophecies" are about the one and same person. Many of what apologists call "prophecies" appear to be statements about King David and say nothing about a future Jesus.

What about "testimony … by actual eyewitnesses"? Again we cannot prove that what's in the Bible is from "eyewitnesses". Moses himself still lacks archaeological corroboration and many critics claim that what's written in his name was put together centuries later. Even if the presence of "eyewitnesses" were historically confirmed there is still the problem that people's observations are faulty, and that memories are selective, malleable and subject to "false memory syndrome".

And with no proof of genuine eyewitnesses, reliable testimony, or undisputed prophecy, the *Awake!* magazine's claim that future resurrected people will supply evidence is nonsense since this is a doctrinal claim which *assumes* the Bible is true prior to any proof.

The above is typical of most JW apologetics. Archaeology (and other science) is rejected as irrelevant whenever it conflicts with the Bible and the reason to believe is because the Bible claims to be true. If such reasoning is

rational then we should believe everything — Mormonism, Islam, Nazism, UFOlogy, superstition, everything — that is written in books that claim to be true or claim back-up from eyewitnesses. But the JWs reasoning is not rational.

Since the JW leaders have not given us scientific or rational reasons to believe the Bible, the acceptance of the Bible comes down to believing the JWs leaders. Therefore we need to check their credibility. This in turn brings up their failed prophecies [See: *DATES*] and thousands of changes in their theology] all of which they claimed came from the Bible!

[See: *ERRORS*; *FINISHED MYSTERY*]

BIBLE-BASED

To JWs the term "Bible-based" when used in WTS publications refers to teachings that are allegedly correct and derived from the correct interpretation of Scripture.

The Governing Body uses the term "Bible-based" to give their writings authority. The phrase appears 1154 times on *Watchtower Library* (2007) CD and "Bible-based hope" 126 times.

w1974 11/1 644-645 repeats the phrase "Bible-based hope" and adds:

> God's Timetable **points to Now**... That this very generation can hope to see God's promises regarding the future of this earth fulfilled is confirmed by what this present generation has seen in fulfillment of the prophecies of Jesus and his apostles.

The claim "points to Now" referred to 1975 and to "this generation" of 1914 and to "within our twentieth century" and all three turned out wrong — false predictions. The supposed Bible-based hope promoted by JWs for its fulfilment or realization in certain years, decades or generations has always turned out wrong.

BIBLICAL RESEARCH & COMMENTARY INTERNATIONAL INC. (BRCI)

A ministry and support group based in Spokane, Washington State, founded by former JWs in 1983:

> To provide support for active, inactive, and former Jehovah's Witnesses who wish to separate from the Watchtower, but who have been indoctrinated to fear that doing so would lead to separation from God and Christ, BCRI provides a "helpline" ... and a website (www.brci.org), as well as arranging for annual conferences and periodic newsletters.

The ministry publishes *BRCI Quarterly* (edited until 1997 by former JW circuit overseer Ronald Frye), and *BRCI Newsletter*. The Autumn, 2010 edition mentions Daniel S. Dykstra as BRCI president and Marilyn Zweifel in charge of the National 800 Help-Line (1-800-WHY-1914).

The Orlando Sentinel reported about BRCI in 1990:

Ex-members: Being former Jehovah's Witnesses isn't easy

Jehovah's Witnesses describe them as apostates, people who have abandoned the teachings of 'the Scriptures'.

But former Witnesses describe themselves as free individuals who have left behind an authoritarian group. And about 140 gathered in Orlando last weekend to discuss their transition.

"The Witness social structure is such that all your friends are Jehovah's Witnesses, all your family," said Tim Ervolina, president of Biblical Research and Commentary International, a religious educational group. "When I left there, I didn't know anybody"...

"The Watchtower (Bible and Tract Society forecast the end of the world in 1975," said the 35-year-old Lakeland resident. "After 1975 came and went, a lot of us were wondering what could have possibly gone wrong."

Merton Campbell of the general office of the Watchtower Society, the legal corporation that represents the Witnesses, denies that such a prediction was made. "That's not really true," he said...

Ervolina, who now is an Episcopalian, said some Witnesses become "spiritually immobilized" when they leave the Organization and turn to partying as an alternative to a more controlled lifestyle. Others join fundamentalist Christian religions.

Five years ago, in a private conversation, he mentioned that he disagreed with the Watchtower Society. During a meeting with five elders, his ordination was revoked. A year later, he was excommunicated. "My best friend's wife turned

me and him in," he said.

Now, Ervolina said, family members and friends whom he knew through the religious organization are not allowed to talk to him…

Biblical Research and Commentary International was founded in 1983. It now has a nine-member board of directors and 2,000 people on its mailing list. At conferences and through newsletters, the network has encouraged former Witnesses to trust people who have never been part of the Witness organization and get involved in their communities to start new relationships… (A.M. Banks for *The Orlando Sentinel*, July 21, 1990)

BRCI conference

In 1996 a weekend conference sponsored by BRCI was reported in *The Spokesman Review* published in Spokane, Washington State:

By Kelly McBride, Staff writer

Former Jehovah's Witnesses are gathering in Spokane this weekend to discuss child custody disputes and other bitter results of leaving the apocalyptic religious sect.

"The trauma of leaving this church is so destructive that people often implode or explode," said Jim Penton, a retired religion professor and ex-Witness. "There is a lot of breakdown, emotional and spiritual."

While former church members have met to commiserate for years, this conference is the first to address the legal difficulties encountered during divorce and custody proceedings.

"It's becoming the issue for people who have left the church but still want to have some say in the way their children are raised," said Penton, who is among the few dozen people attending the conference. "The church can be pretty ruthless. They train children to alienate non-Witness parents."

Richard Rawe, a Soap Lake, Wash., resident excommunicated from the church in 1977, has been helping other ex-Witnesses since then. He said he is increasingly contacted by parents frustrated by their dealings with the church during legal proceedings.

"The church has a gaggle of about 60 attorneys which they will dispatch to members who need legal assistance," Rawe said. "It doesn't make a very even playing field."

Merton Campbell, a Jehovah's Witness spokesman in Brooklyn, N.Y., would not comment on Rawe's allegations. Local church authorities also declined to comment...

Jehovah's Witnesses, also known by their corporate moniker, the Watchtower Society, are a Christian sect that preaches the end of the world is near. The church has prepared for Armageddon on four different dates this century, but each time the believers have been disappointed.

In addition to their practice of proselytizing door-to-door, they are most often noted for their refusal to accept blood or organ transplants, salute the flag or serve in the military…

At the conference which continues today and Sunday at Cavanaugh's Fourth Avenue hotel, attendees stood up one by one to share their moment of epiphany when they decided to break with the church.

Rueben Mercado of Spokane said that going to the funeral of a mother of five who bled to death during childbirth because she refused a blood transfusion raised questions in his mind…

Sherry Veitenheimer, also from Spokane, said she was shocked to hear an elder proclaim that an abused woman should stay married to her abuser, but that divorce was acceptable if one spouse prevented the other from attending church...

Because former members are shunned, choosing to leave the church is often just as painful as staying, said Ron Frye, president of the ex-Witness group holding this weekend's convention.

Former church members have formed several of their own organizations, such as the Biblical Research and Commentary International, and are widely represented on the Internet's World Wide Web… (The Spokesman Review, October 5, 1996)

BINDING OF SATAN (Revelation 20:1-3)
An event that, according to Russell, began in 1878 (wr1890 7/1 1233) and is finalised at the close of Armageddon, which Russell taught would take place in 1915. Satan's binding was also to occur before the "anarchy of Armageddon". (Convention Report 1916, 308)

Nowadays JWs believe it will occur after Armageddon.

BINCKELE, C.
C. Binckele was a prominent American Russellite of German descent. Stationed in Germany when World War I broke out, Binckele returned to the USA when German Russellism collapsed in 1915.

Binckele was sent by Russell to Switzerland in 1916 to remove Lang, the overseer at the time, from the WBT"s Zurich office and replace him as overseer. In late 1919 Rutherford put Binckele in charge of the Genoa Office to replace Freytag who nevertheless retained control.

Therefore in 1920 Binckele was appointed manager of the newly created Central European Office until July 1925 when replaced by Zaug.

Disgusted at Rutherford's failed prophecies for 1925 Binckele defected in 1926 and founded The Free Bible Students (Yearbook 1980, 46-63) and published *Der Pilgrim*.

BIOGRAPHIES
Biographies of prominent long-term JWs have appeared in *The Watchtower* since the 1950s.

The biographies give little genuine history but repeat official value judgements and sentiments in praise of the Organization. The writers often repeat that Russellism or Rutherfordism was "God's truth" or "the truth" (w1986 10/1 26); they were "right" regarding 1914; the defectors of long ago were "apostate" and "puffed up" (w1981 11/15 25); Russell's books had "Bible truth" (w1986 12/1 26); and what was taught was "Jehovah's light". (w1981 11/15 25)

A significant number of anachronisms also appear — the writers "remember" things that could not have happened. One person remembered being told in 1928 that Jesus had returned in 1914 and referred to the book *The Harp of God* (1922). (w1988 5/1 22) However, Jesus' return was not transferred to 1914 until 1930, and *The Harp of God* taught that Jesus returned in 1874. Reprintings of *The Harp of God* in the 1930s continued to have 1874. (The Harp of God, pp 230, 231, 234, 235, 236, 237, 241, 244, 271) In another biography the person "remembered" being told in 1921 that Jesus had returned in 1914! (w1990 9/1 11)

The Governing Body checks all that is published, which means that the anachronisms, the errors, are deliberately retained.

The official biographies, therefore, are a method of falsifying history and having the last word in old disputes.

BIRTH CONTROL
Birth control or artificial methods of preventing pregnancy are permitted to JWs except methods that permit fertilization and kill the fertilized egg-cell. (w1969 12 /15 766)

BIRTH DATE OF JESUS
Russell's calculation of 2 BCE has been retained as official belief.

BIRTHDAYS
Russell saw nothing wrong with birthdays. Around 1930 Rutherford banned birthday celebrations and birthday cards among his followers, allegedly because Herod and Pharaoh celebrated birthdays whereas early Christians did not, and because celebrations give excessive importance to individuals:

> However, the only two birthday celebrations mentioned in the Bible involved people who were not true believers. They were a Pharoah of Egypt and the Roman ruler Antipas, each of whose birthday celebrations had deadly results. (School and Jehovah's Witnesses 1983, 17-18)

However, the birthdays in the two Bible stories are incidental details and did not cause the "deadly results" — human action did that.

Commemorating birthdays is not criticised in the Bible. In Luke 2 "a multitude of the heavenly host" appears to shepherds and sing praises to God on Jesus' birth day, and are not criticized for doing so.

Another behaviour "mentioned in the Bible" which "involved people who were not true believers" and had "deadly results", is using the toilet or "relieving" oneself. (Judges 3:20-25; 1 Kings 18:27 NWT)

This activity, however, is not prohibited to JWs.

BLIND

Used figuratively of people who disagree with the beliefs of JWs:

> Many sincere but religiously blinded persons today are just like Saul and oppose true Christianity. (w1984 9/1 24)
>
> (See also: *SPIRITUALLY BLIND*)

BLITZKRIEG

In the early 1940s JWs believed that the King of the North (Daniel 11:36-45) is Nazi Germany, Fascist Italy and the Roman Catholic Church.

Daniel's words "the king of the north shall rush upon him like a whirlwind" (Daniel 11:40) were interpreted as Hitler's "blitzkrieg". (w1941 12/1 357-358)

Thirteen years after this interpretation was refuted by Hitler being defeated, the WTS published *Your Will Be Done on Earth* (1958) in which the king of the north was identified as the Soviet Union.

BLIZZARD, PAUL (c.1954-)

An American third-generation JW who knew various WTS leaders personally.

Blizzard dropped out of high school in 1971 because of the predictions for 1975, regarding which he writes:

> …thousands of Jehovah's Witnesses cashed in insurance policies, abandoned careers, and sold their possessions to spend the "short time remaining" in the ministry work...

Blizzard's grandfather was a Baptist minister's son who joined "Russellism" around 1910, and an "ecclesia" (congregation) met in his home. Later, members of the Governing Body, and A.H. Macmillan author of *Faith on the March* (1957), became guests and personal friends of the Blizzard family.

From 1973 to 1976 Blizzard served at Brooklyn headquarters, in the book bindery for $14.00 (U.S.) per month. Of this period he writes:

> Knorr was a cold businessman with little personality and little regard for other people's problems... Franz, on the other hand, was congenial and polite. I first met him in 1973 in the hallway at Bethel. His clothing struck me as weird. He often wore a plaid flannel shirt with pocket full of pens, a silk tie and brown corduroy slacks. We at Bethel snickered at his attire—to ourselves, of course. Our dining room was atop the "Squibb" complex, which was two blocks from the main Bethel building. Franz often would want someone to walk with him to the dining room because of his poor eyesight. I remember walking him many times down Columbia Heights to the complex...

After leaving Bethel, Blizzard married Pat, a former missionary of 8 years, and served in a congregation:

> As I gained status in the congregation, I was being exposed to and trained in some of the undercover work of the local elders. It was exciting slinking around in the darkness, spying on members of the congregation who were suspected of wrongdoing. I also was given access to the congregation files, which revealed the inside information of all in the congregation….
>
> All I knew of God was what I read in the Watchtower. Yes, we did read the Bible, but were told that if we did so apart from the Watchtower books to interpret it, we were destined to fall into apostasy and ultimately be destroyed by God.

Blizzard read William Schnell's book *Thirty Years a Watchtower Slave* and bought a New American Standard Bible which he studied secretly with his wife, finding that "many of the major doctrines that we had been willing to die for were false."

Blood

In August 1980 their daughter was born. At age five weeks she cut her finger and "doctors found that Jenny's blood simply would not clot."

The doctors were informed "we had to obey God's law" but a court order was issued. The local elders wanted to kidnap the baby but:

> I knew that Jenny would shortly die if I removed her from the machines that were keeping her alive, and I would be charged with murder. I explained this to the elders. They replied, "That's the chance you have to take! You cannot allow them to give your child blood!" Without further discussion, I asked them to leave, stating that we could not allow our child to die in this way. "If this is the God I serve, I am through with Him."

The Blizzards were now outcasts but not disfellowshipped since they had not given permission for the transfusion.

After assistance from local Christians and "secret study of the Bible" they found that "all we needed for Salvation was faith in the Lord Jesus Christ". They were then promptly disfellowshipped.

www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/fred_franz.htm
www.watchthetower.net/test

BLOOD — ADVOCATES for JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES for REFORM on BLOOD

A group of dissident JWs formally known as Associated Jehovah's Witnesses for Reform on Blood (AJWRB) claims there is no biblical basis for prohibiting blood transfusions.

An advisor to AJWRB, neurologist Osamu Muramoto, has raised various issues in the *Journal of Medical Ethics* including the WTS's coercion, doctrinal inconsistencies, and exaggeration of the risks of blood transfusion.

Dissident JWs have argued that:

- The use of Leviticus 17:12 to support opposition to blood transfusion conflicts with the teaching that Christians are not under the Law of Moses.

- The decree at Acts 15 to abstain from blood was not a permanent covenant for all Christians but a local ruling to maintain peace between Jewish and Gentile Christians.

- The WTS controls and restricts the information JWs receive thereby controlling their so-called free choice.

- The penalty of being shunned coerces JWs to say "no" to blood transfusion because they fear social rejection and isolation more than the risk of dying.

- The WTS fails to explain how to differentiate between prohibited treatments and "matters of conscience". The distinction is based on Governing Body decisions which JWs must accept as Bible-based "truth". White blood cells (1% of blood volume) and platelets (0.17%) are forbidden, yet albumin (2.2 per cent of blood volume) is permitted.

- Donating blood or storing blood for autologous transfusion is deemed wrong, but the use of blood components obtained from blood that was donated and stored is permitted.

- JWs view blood as sacred and symbolizing life but let people die by placing more importance on the symbol than the reality it symbolizes. The symbol for life is not permitted to save life but must be rejected.

- WTS publications exaggerate the risks of blood transfusions and ignore the benefits, but do the reverse for alternative treatments — they exaggerate the advantages and downgrade the risks.

- WTS publications rarely acknowledge that blood transfusion alternatives are inadequate in rapid, massive haemorrhage where a person loses half their blood.

- The Governing Body gives little consideration to the burden on families when one member dies or endures prolonged disability due to having rejected blood transfusion.

- WTS publications sometimes cite centuries-old viewpoints. A 1990 brochure quoted a 17th-century doctor to support the view that a blood transfusion is equivalent to eating blood.

- The WTS uses false analogy when it argues: "Consider a man who is told by the doctor that he must abstain from alcohol. Would he be obedient if he quit drinking alcohol but had it put directly into his veins?"
  Muramoto responds: "Orally ingested alcohol is absorbed as alcohol and circulated as such in the blood, whereas orally eaten blood is digested and does not enter the circulation as blood. Blood introduced directly into the veins circulates and functions as blood, not as nutrition. Hence, blood transfusion is a cellular organ transplantation. And ... organ transplants are now permitted by the WTS."
  Muramoto says that objection to blood transfusions on the basis that it constitutes eating blood is similar to a patient who refuses a tissue transplant because a doctor advised him to eat less meat.

A estimates that between 1961 and 2016 33,246 JWs may have needlessly died because of the doctrine, an average of 596 per year, and 1220 in 2016.
https://www.ajwrb.org/estimating-mortality-epidemiological-extrapolations-the-blood-prohibition

BLOOD — ARTIFICIAL

"Artificial blood" is a product that performs **two** functions of blood when infused into a human — transport of oxygen and removal of carbon dioxide.

Trials with artificial blood started in 1979 and have been lifesaving in some cases of severe blood loss where haemoglobin levels were too low to transport adequate oxygen around the patient's body.

WTS Comment

Awake! 1980 2/22 21, under "Artificial Blood Makes Its Debut", reports on perfluorochemicals or PFCs which came into use in 1979 for emergency situations:

> One such case was a 67-year-old Witness from Minnesota who, according to *Science News,* "received two liters [4.2 pints] of the chemicals, constituting about 25 percent of his total blood volume. After that, his condition improved, the artificial blood was slowly excreted from his body... In California, a 65-year-old man received three pints (1.4 L) of the same "synthetic blood" in connection with extensive stomach surgery. He was released from the hospital five days later... (g1980 2/22 21)

The same *Awake!* on page 29 reports on "Fluosol":

> In November, the first American "artificial blood" transfusion was administered at the University of Minnesota Hospital. It was soon followed by other such transfusions. The product used, Fluosol, was developed in Japan and had already been used there in about 50 emergency cases... The Minnesota patient received six pints of the milky, oxygen-carrying fluid after refusing a blood transfusion on religious grounds.

Fluosol did not live up to expectations, and experimentation with it in humans stopped in 1985. (w1985 4/14 21) However:

> Australian scientists have developed a blood substitute which they say is better for most uses than human whole blood and plasma," claims *The Bulletin,* an Australian financial magazine. Named CH (casein hydrolysate), it is a protein and can be made from milk or soybeans... CH has yet to gain Australia's state health department approval. (ibid)

Artificial blood — newspaper reports:

Man given artificial blood

MINNEAPOLIS. Minnesota, Wednesday— Artificial blood has been used on a human being for the first time.

Mr. R. Lee, a spokesman for the University of Minnesota Hospital said the blood substitute was used several weeks ago on a 67-year-old Jehovah's Witness who had refused conventional blood because of religious beliefs…

The blood substitute, called Fluosol, is a mixture of fluorocarbon chemicals which can carry large amounts of oxygen to the body's cells and at the same time remove carbon dioxide. (The Advertiser 1979, November 22)

New blood for Jehovahs

HUNDREDS of America's 590,000 Jehovah's Witnesses may soon be taking part in "artificial blood" clinical trials…

Now with extensive US trials of blood substitute called fluosolda about to start, Jehovah's Witnesses are likely to be in the singular position of serving as a national medical resource.

The Food and Drug Administration has decreed that experiments with "artificial blood" will be restricted to acutely anaemic patients in need of elective surgery who refuse blood transfusions…

Fluosolda, a strange white fluid chemically similar to teflon, is apparently the most advanced blood substitute found so far…

The fluid has already been injected into 490 patients in Japan.

The Green Cross corporation in Osaka has announced that as early as May the Japanese Government may license the oil-derived product for human use, making Japan the first country to do so.

Some studies have shown that fluosolda, manufactured by Alpha Therapeutic Corporation of Los Angeles, might do some things better than blood and may eventually play a priceless role in such aspects of medicine as emergency care after accidents, cancer diagnosis and therapy and treatment of carbon monoxide poisonings…

In the past three years, 13 patients have

received fluosolda on an emergency basis in US hospitals.

This led to wide publicity for the substance as an artificial blood, which it really isn't.

However, one hope is that in some cases it will substitute for just one single crucial function of the haemoglobin in red blood cells—the exchange of oxygen and carbon dioxide with cells throughout the body.

Fluosolda could never replace the white cells, antibodies, clotting factors and the many other substances that make up whole blood.

Because it does not contain the antigens in human red cells it could be given to anyone regardless of blood type, with no risk of the dangerous transfusion reaction that can be triggered by mismatched blood.

It would not carry the organisms that cause hepatitis and other serious infections that often follow transfusions.

And another advantage is that fluosolda can be stored for three years, compared to five weeks for human plasma.

On the debit side is that the blood substitute circulates in the blood for only about 11 hours before being exhaled through the lungs.

This means that repeated transfusions would be required…
(Hugh Schmitt, The Advertiser 1982 February 16)

Test of blood substitute cancelled due to deaths

HOUSTON—A test of a blood substitute in emergency room patients has been halted because more patients died than expected… Baxter Healthcare Corp. of Deerfield, Ill., ended the trauma patients test on Tuesday after a review of the first 100 study enrollees showed that people given the artificial blood HemAssist died at a greater rate than those who did not receive it... (Dayton Daily News 1998 April 2)

Artificial blood — so far a false hope

Artificial blood, as shown in the above reports, has not developed to where it can replace all blood transfusions.

The possibility of further progress may have encouraged the Governing Body to retain their anti-blood transfusion doctrine despite cancelling their opposition to tissue transplants. Apparently they gambled that technology would rescue them from admitting that they are wrong in using the Bible to oppose blood transfusions.

BLOOD — ARTIFICIAL HEMOGLOBIN

Northfield Laboratories in Illinois produced an "artificial hemoglobin" called "PolyHeme":

> PolyHeme is a solution of chemically modified hemoglobin made from human blood. Northfield purchases donated blood from The American Red Cross and Blood Centers of America for use as the starting material for PolyHeme... Hemoglobin is first extracted from red blood cells and filtered to remove impurities. The purified hemoglobin is next chemically modified using a multi-step process to create a polymerized form of hemoglobin designed to avoid the undesirable effects historically associated with hemoglobin-based blood substitutes, including vasoconstriction, kidney dysfunction, liver dysfunction and gastrointestinal distress. The modified hemoglobin is then incorporated into a solution which can be administered as an alternative to transfused blood...

Whether the JW Governing Body considered Polyheme acceptable for JWs is unclear. In 2009 Northfield Laboratories shut down because trials with 720 trauma victims showed Polyheme to be less effective than blood:

> Following the FDA rejection of its blood substitute PolyHeme, Northfield Labs said late Friday that it is laying off all its staff and shutting down. "Northfield Laboratories announced today that it has terminated the employment of substantially all of its operational and staff employees at its manufacturing facility in Mount Prospect, Illinois and headquarters in Evanston, Illinois," the company said in a statement.
> The company spent 20 years developing the blood substitute, including two years of frustrated attempts to gain approval of the drug. But last week the FDA said that the risks associated with Poly-Heme outweigh its benefits, due to the fact that a greater number of patients given PolyHeme died after 30 days than those given regular blood.

www.fiercebiotech.com/biotech/northfield-labs-shuts-down
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/PolyHeme.htm

BLOOD — HEMOPURE

Hemopure is a "blood substitute" which performs the blood functions of oxygen transport and clotting. It is a hemoglobin-based oxygen carrier based on chemically stabilized bovine hemoglobin. It is for potential use in humans when blood is not available or not an option and is approved for human use in South Africa.

A company named Biopure began developing Hemopure in 1997. The shelf life of red blood cells under refrigerated conditions is about 40 days but Hemopure for three years at room temperature. Hemopure can be purified of infectious agents and made compatible with all blood groups by removal of the A and B antigens.

Apparently Hemopure was neither endorsed for use by JWs by the Governing Body nor prohibited although its manufacture using cows' blood flouted their belief that storage of blood is against the Bible.

http://www.ele.uri.edu/Courses/ele482/S07/MattC_2.pdf

BLOOD AND BULGARIA

In 1998 the WTS seemingly backed down to the government of Bulgaria over blood transfusions!

In 1961 the Governing Body made giving or taking of blood for transfusion an excommunication offence:

> According to the law of Moses ... the receiver of a blood transfusion must be cut off from God's people by excommunication or disfellowshipping… As a rebellious opposer and unfaithful example to fellow members of the Christian congregation he must be cut off therefrom by disfellowshipping.
> (w1961 1/15 63, 64)

In 1994 the Bulgarian Council of Ministers refused to renew the registration of JWs as a religion and in 1995 the WTS lost an appeal in the Bulgarian Supreme Court for legal status. The main reason was the anti-blood doctrine enforced by excommunication.

The matter went before the European Commission of Human Rights at Strasbourg. In March 1998 the Bulgarian government granted JWs recognition as a religion and in return:

> The applicant [the WTS] undertook with regard to its stance on blood transfusions to draft a statement for inclusion in its statute providing that members should have free choice in the matter for themselves and their children, without any control or sanction on the part of the association.

A WTS press release dated April 27 said:

> Bulgaria has agreed to grant the Christian Association of Jehovah's Witnesses recognition as a religion. Bulgaria also agreed to create without delay a bill that will allow alternate civilian service for those whose conscience will not allow them to engage in military service. The agreement also includes an acknowledgment that each individual has the freedom to choose the type of medical treatment he receives. With the amicable settlement the Witnesses agreed to withdraw their complaint against Bulgaria.

Agreement circumvented

The Governing Body circumvented the agreement to permit free choice without "control or sanction" by declaring that JWs who take blood have rejected Bible truth and therefore disfellowshipped themselves. JWs know, as part of their indoctrination, that they must ostracize anyone who is disfellowshipped. Therefore "control and sanction" remained in place. The procedure became a little different but the result was the same and Bulgaria in effect lost.

A WTS press release explained:

> If a baptised member of the faith wilfully and without regret accepts blood transfusions, he indicates by his own actions that he no longer wishes to be one of Jehovah's Witnesses. The individual revokes his own membership by his own actions, rather than the congregation initiating this step. This represents a procedural step instituted in April 2000…

The claim that someone who accepts a blood transfusion thereby expresses "he no longer wishes to be one of Jehovah's Witnesses" is dubious. Compare a JW who refuses to vote. Does it follow from his violation of the legal requirement to vote that "he indicates by his own actions that he no longer wishes to be a

citizen of the country he lives in" and wants to be deported?

Clearly, the acceptance or otherwise of a medical treatment or refusal to vote do not necessarily express preference for, or rejection of, a religion or country.

Along with the revised disfellowshipping program, JWs were instructed to no longer say "the Society teaches" but to say "the Bible says", thereby demonstrating their beliefs to be free choices, not "bound by the dictates of some religious sect".

A *Watchtower* article in March 1998 titled *Living up to Christian Dedication in Freedom* says JWs have freedom of choice as "free moral agents":

> In order to avoid misunderstandings, Jehovah's Witnesses try to be careful about how they express themselves. Instead of saying, "the Society teaches," many Witnesses prefer to use such expressions as, "the Bible says" or, "I understand the Bible to teach." In this way they emphasize the personal decision that each Witness has made in accepting Bible teachings and also avoid giving the false impression that Witnesses are somehow bound to the dictates of some religious sect...
> The Bible clearly shows that true Christians do not serve God under coercion. (w1998 3/15 19-20)

Based on the above, every JW facing major surgery has to tell his surgeon that he is following his Bible-trained conscience and rejects blood transfusion on his own initiative!

Not following "Bible-trained conscience" but Governing Body indoctrination

The reality is that the JWs leaders have changed hundreds of their so-called "Bible truths". Prior to every revision all JWs promoted the same error, and after the revision they unanimously adopted the new version (often another error). Many teachings have flip-flopped back and forth several times and the alleged "Bible-trained conscience" of all JWs flip-flopped in unison although the Bible didn't change.

The fact that the beliefs of JWs immediately align with their Governing Body whenever they publish something new, suggests that JWs are indeed "bound by the dictates of some religious sect" and are not "free moral agents", but are indoctrinated to repeat and obey what they've been told and do so under the threat of excommunication which includes rejection by and exclusion from their entire social net work. A decision or choice enforced by the threat of a punishment that can lead to serious emotional illness or suicide is not a free choice.

Freedom of religion and bad advice

Another reason for promoting the claim that every JW rejects blood on his own initiative could be to sidestep the issue of whether freedom of religion conveys the right to give bad medical advice if the bad advice is based on sincere religious belief.

This issue was raised in a 2007 suit in Canada in which it was argued:

> "Whether religious views provide a defence to, or justification for, misrepresentations that cause bodily harm or death should only be decided on a full factual record," they further held.
>
> …the appeal court concluded that it was "not 'plain and obvious' that a sincerely held religious belief would be an answer to a claim where application of the religious doctrine is said to have caused a death." (Schmitz 2007)

In the early 2020s, with Covid killing millions, the issue of bad advice based on religious belief arose when religious leaders (although not the JWs leaders) opposed vaccinations and/or restrictions on meetings.

If every JW who requires surgery states he decided for himself based on his "Bible trained conscience" to reject blood then the question, including possible litigation, of who advised him may not arise.

Deaths

As the drama in Bulgaria unfolded, deaths of JWs from lack of blood continued to occur.

According to *Outreach Tidbits*, Sam Perrota of Aukland New Zealand rejected blood on behalf of his wife and three-year-old daughter on August 3, 1996, after a car accident. The daughter died from blood loss. Sam subsequently studied the doctrine and found it erroneous and was excommunicated. The wife, Simone Perrota, then committed suicide. (Outreach Tidbits, April 1998)

Conclusion

The WTS got re-registered in Bulgaria despite JWs retaining the sanction of ostracism against members who accepted blood transfusions.

Behind the Governing Body's manoeuvre was expert guidance by lawyers of the WBTS Legal Department and there was nothing the Government of Bulgaria could do to counteract their strategy. The Government cannot force people who assert "My Bible-trained conscience won't let me associate with someone who has disfellowshipped himself and this is my freely chosen belief" to befriend the ostracized person.

BLOOD AND CUSTODY

The blood-transfusion issue routinely gets consideration in custody cases. For example:

> **Ex-Wife's religion cited in custody dispute**
> St. Petersburg Times, January 4, 1999
>
> WEST PALM BEACH — A father who fears that his ex-wife's religious beliefs could jeopardize his child's health is seeking custody of the 19-month-old boy.
>
> Calvin Dodd, a lapsed Lutheran, is seeking sole custody of the child from his ex-wife, Patricia, a Jehovah's Witness. Divorce documents were filed Oct. 25.
>
> Palm Beach County Judge Michael Geraten on Tuesday ordered that Mrs. Dodd must notify her estranged husband if the child needs emergency medical care.
>
> The child is in good health and, the father had sought the order strictly as a precaution.
>
> In the hearing, Ms. Dodd said she did not believe blood could save lives and would oppose blood transfusions for her son, if needed.
>
> The judge's order ensures that Mrs. Dodd will not be able to withhold consent for emergency medical treatment, including blood transfusions, said Kevin Richardson, the father's attorney. State law requires the consent of only one parent for medical treatment, he said.
>
> Until the case gets a full hearing, Gersten appointed a guardian who must be told whenever the child is hurt.
> https://www.sun-sentinel.com/news/fl-xpm-1990-01-03-9001170237-story

BLOOD BAN INTRODUCTION

JWs introduced their ban on blood transfusions into various countries progressively: In the USA in December 1944, most countries of Europe by 1950 as JWs literature in those languages became available, and all other countries wherever JWs gained converts.

BLOOD CARDS

See: *BLOOD TRANSFUSION IDENTITY CARD*

BLOOD FRACTIONS/COMPONENTS

A blood fraction is any of the natural components of whole blood, some of which JWs may accept and some which they refuse.

In 1961 the infusing of "some blood fraction to sustain life" was ruled out:

> The Bible is very clear that blood could properly be used only on the altar; otherwise it was to be poured out on the ground. (Lev. 17:11-13) The entire modern medical practice involving the use of blood is objectionable from the Christian standpoint. Therefore the taking of a blood transfusion, or, in lieu of that, the infusing of some blood fraction to sustain one's life is wrong. (w1961 11/1 670)

By 1990 some blood-based treatments had become acceptable (although they rely on other people's donated and stored blood and both donation and storage supposedly violate God's command).

About 45% of human blood is cellular — red cells, white cells and platelets:

> The other 55 percent is the plasma. This is 90 percent water, but it carries small amounts of many proteins, hormones, salts, and enzymes. Today, much of the donated blood is separated into the primary components. One patient may be given a transfusion of plasma ... to treat shock. But an anemic patient might be given packed red cells, that is, red cells that had been stored and then put in a fluid and transfused. Platelets and white cells are also transfused but less commonly...
>
> In view of the command to 'abstain from blood,' some Christians have felt that they should not accept an immune globulin (protein) injection, even though it was only a blood fraction...
>
> Others have felt that a serum (antitoxin), such as immune globulin, containing only a tiny fraction of a donor's blood plasma and used to bolster their defense against disease, is not the same as a life-

> sustaining blood transfusion. So their consciences may not forbid them to take immune globulin or similar fractions...
>
> That some protein fractions from the plasma do move naturally into the blood system of another individual (the fetus) may be another consideration when a Christian is deciding whether he will accept immune globulin, albumin, or similar injections of plasma fractions. One person may feel that he in good conscience can; another may conclude that he cannot. Each must resolve the matter personally before God. (w1990 6/1 30-31)

Thus some blood fractions including proteins that move naturally from the mother's blood to the fetus' blood are permitted to JWs via injection or transfusion:

> However, Witnesses' religious understanding does not absolutely prohibit the use of components such as albumin, immune globulins, and hemophiliac preparations; each Witness must decide individually if he can accept these. (How Can Blood Save Your Life? 1990, 27)
>
> Other Christians decide differently. They too refuse transfusions of whole blood, red cells, white cells, platelets, or plasma. Yet, they might allow a physician to treat them with a fraction extracted from the primary components. Even here there may be differences. One Christian may accept a gamma globulin injection, but he may or may not agree to an injection containing something extracted from red or white cells. Overall, though, what might lead some Christians to conclude that they could accept blood fractions?
>
> "Questions From Readers" in *The Watchtower* of June 1, 1990, noted that plasma proteins (fractions) move from a pregnant woman's blood to the separate blood system of her fetus. Thus a mother passes immunoglobulins to her child, providing valuable immunity.
>
> Separately, as a fetus' red cells complete their normal life span, their oxygen-carrying portion is processed. Some of it becomes bilirubin, which crosses the placenta to the mother and is eliminated with her body wastes. Some Christians may conclude that since blood fractions can pass to another person in this natural setting, they could accept a blood fraction derived from blood plasma or cells...
>
> Jehovah's Witnesses refuse transfusions of both whole blood and its primary blood components... Beyond that, when it comes to fractions of any of the primary components, each Christian, after careful and prayerful meditation, must conscientiously decide for himself.
> (w2000 6/15 30-31)

The Governing Body thus rules that JWs may accept albumin, immune globulins, Factor VIII, Factor IX, and their own blood circulated outside the body through a heart/lung or kidney machine, but must refuse plasma, red cells, white cells, platelets, and their own blood stored outside the body.

This was very different, far less restrictive than the 1961 ruling: "the infusing of some blood fraction to sustain one's life is wrong." (w1961 11/1 670) The Governing Body was apparently making concessions so as to reduce the body count of JWs dying needlessly in hospitals. Or perhaps they had started an intentional step by step program, to allow blood fractions and components one after another, eventually even whole blood, and with each step declare it a matter of conscience.

Prohibited and acceptable procedures

Guidelines regarding what blood components JWs could accept became increasingly elaborate. The following interpretation is from *BRCI Helpline Update* (January 2000):

Prohibited	Acceptable
Whole blood	Plasma proteins (albumin; globulin; fibrin)
Red blood cells	Clotting factors
Platelets	Stem cells
Plasma	Hemodilution; cell saver
Hemoglobin solution	Bone marrow transplants
Stored autologous blood	Extracorporeal circulation (heart-lung machine; dialysis; plasmapheresis)
Blood donation	

According to Wikipedia in 2016 the following were at the time prohibited:

- Transfusion of allogeneic whole blood or its constituents of red cells, white cells, platelets or plasma.
- Transfusions of pre-operative self-donated (autologous) blood.

["Allogeneic whole blood" means that the blood donation is from another person who is unrelated or genetically different.]

The following procedures and products are not prohibited:

- Blood donation for purpose of fractionation of red cells, white cells, platelets or plasma for either allogeneic or autologous transfusion
- Transfusions of autologous blood part of a "current therapy".
- Hemodilution (a technique in which equipment is arranged in a circuit linked to the patient's circulatory system.
- Intraoperative blood salvage (autologous) or *cell-saver scavenging* — a method of reinfusing blood that has spilled from the circulatory system into an open wound.
- Heart-Lung Machine
- Dialysis
- Epidural Blood Patch — whereby a small amount of the patient's blood is injected into the membrane surrounding the spinal cord.
- Plasmapheresis — where blood is withdrawn and filtered, the plasma removed, and returned to the patient.
- Fractions from red blood cells.
- Fractions from white blood cells — Interferons and Interleukins.
- Fractions from platelets — Platelet factor 4.
- Fractions from blood plasma —
  Albumin
  Globulins
  Cryoprecipitate
  Clotting factors including Factor VIII and Factor IX derived from stored blood
  Wound healing factor
- Erythropoietin

Inconsistent aspects

The JWs position was inconsistent in that:

- JWs could not themselves be blood donors, and could even have their own blood stored for their own future use, but were permitted to accept blood fractions and components obtained (and stored) from the blood of other donors.

- Some blood factors move naturally between mother and fetus and therefore should not be against Gods law if infused by transfusion during a medical emergency. Small amounts of red and white cells also travel naturally between mother and fetus. Therefore their transfusion to save life should also not offend God but to JWs it remained sinful to do that.

Sometimes blood components or procedures were acceptable or unacceptable to JWs subject to other conditions, and there are borderline situations where individuals decide for themselves.

A JW could therefore die due to ignorance by rejecting a treatment that the Governing Body considered acceptable or would declare acceptable in the near future.

An interesting case

An interesting case is "Allogeneic Transplant" by which patients receive "hematopoietic stem cells" which are otherwise produced in bone marrow. These cells are stored in the marrow and change into white blood cells, red blood cells and platelets as needed by the body.

"Allogeneic" means that the transplanted cells come from a donor and may be obtained by:

1. Inserting needles into the hip bone and extracting marrow with syringes;
2. Giving the donor a stimulating factor which causes the marrow to release the stem cells into the blood stream from where they can be removed by circulating the blood through a machine that removes them;
3. Taking the cells from umbilical cord blood.

Since the cells transplanted are not blood cells but develop into blood cells, would "Allogeneic Transplant" be acceptable to JWs?

2026 amendments

Further amendments by the Governing Body in 2026 OK'd the prohibited blood components listed in 2016 in Wikipedia i.e. red cells, white cells, platelets and plasma as well as autologous blood.

Apparently only transfusions of whole blood with all its original components are now prohibited, a type of transfusion not often needed.

(See: *BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS SANCTIONED*)

BLOOD ISSUE/QUESTION

The phrase "the blood issue" refers to the organizational decree that JWs must refuse blood transfusions and the problems and controversies that often result.

BLOOD SUBSTITUTES

- Plasma volume expanders that stop veins from collapsing due to blood loss, but which don't perform all the functions of real blood.

- Products referred to as "Artificial Blood".
(See: *BLOOD — ARTIFICIAL*)

BLOOD TRANSFUSION -- AUTOLOGOUS

Autologous transfusion whereby a patient's own blood is withdrawn (or collected during surgery) and later transfused into him was disallowed to JWs:

> So, if medical personnel suggest that a Christian permit some of his blood to be withdrawn and deposited in a blood bank for later transfusion purposes, the Christian is not without guidance from the Bible as to the proper course. He can mention that ancient Israelites were told that removed blood was to be 'poured out on the ground as water,' to show that it was for God and not to sustain the life of some earthly creature. (Deut. 12:24) (w1995 8/1 30)

> This clearly rules out one common use of autologous blood — *preoperative* collection, storage, and later infusion of a patient's own blood. In such procedure, this is what is done: Prior to elective surgery, some units of a person's whole blood are banked or the red cells are separated, frozen, and stored. Then if it seems that the patient needs blood during or following surgery, his own stored blood can be returned to him. Current anxieties about blood-borne diseases have made *this* use of autologous blood popular. Jehovah's Witnesses, though, DO NOT accept *this* procedure. (w1989 3/1 30)

However hemodilution, whereby the patient's blood is stored outside his body but the storage bags and equipment remain in a circuit with the patient's circulatory system, was permitted:

> What about induced hemodilution? Some surgeons believe that it is advantageous for a patient's blood to be diluted during surgery. *Thus, at the start of an operation, they direct some blood to storage bags outside a patient's body and replace such with non blood fluids; later, the blood is allowed to flow from the bags back to the patient.* Since Christians do not let their blood be stored, some physicians have adapted this procedure, arranging the equipment in a circuit that is constantly linked to the patient's circulatory system. Some Christians have accepted this, others have refused. Again, each individual must decide whether he would consider the blood diverted in such a hemodilution circuit to be similar to that flowing through a heart/lung machine, or he would think of it as blood that left him and therefore should be disposed of. (w1989 3/1 31)

The patient's blood withdrawn during hemodilution prior to surgery is replaced with a plasma expander to maintain constant circulating blood volume. During surgery his blood can if needed be reinfused.

BLOOD TRANSFUSION REJECTION MORTALITY

In a comprehensive study of maternal mortality during childbirth in the Netherlands Wolfswinkel et al (2009) list six cases of mortality among JWs:

> All were direct maternal deaths caused by major obstetric haemorrhage and the refusal of red blood cell transfusion was an important factor in the course of events leading to the death of these six women. Hypovolaemic shock causing cardiac failure or post-anoxic encephalopathy was the mode of death…

Below are two lists of blood-loss deaths among JWs. The lists are partial because there are thousands of newspapers and magazines and most lack indexes covering all editions. Even if all news reports of JWs deaths could be found this would still omit all who did not come to the notice of reporters. The lists could probably be greatly extended if a **thorough** search of all medical and law journals were done.

Worldwide estimate

Investigator Magazine (May 1990) relied on newspaper reports to conclude that four JWs had died from blood-loss in South Australia.

SA had about 1/700th of all JWs worldwide and therefore a rough provisional estimate for the world total of JWs deaths from blood loss by 1990 was 700 x 4 =2800. Possible 5th and 6th SA victims came to notice after 1990 — increasing the world estimate to 700 x 6 = 4200. This would be a low estimate because it's unlikely that all relevant SA newspaper reports were found or that all deaths from blood loss made news. Additional deaths might also have been reported in magazines and other sources.

Singla et al (2001) did a study of the maternal death rate in the USA among JWs women in childbirth. The calculated death rate — based on two maternal deaths out of 332

JWs women — came to 512 deaths per 100,000 live births, which was 44 times higher than for non-JWs.

If JWs females in the USA at the time numbered about 500,000 with an annual birth rate of 20 births per 1000 females, then about 10,000 JWs females per year gave birth. A rate of 512 deaths per 100,000 gives an estimate of about 50 unnecessary deaths during childbirth per year.

Since only 1/6 of all JWs worldwide lived in the USA at that time, a rough world-wide estimate of unnecessary deaths among JWs women giving birth is 50 x 6 = 300 per year. Of course JWs also die during many other blood-loss events not just childbirth.

It needs to be emphasized that estimates like the above are extrapolated from inadequate data and therefore tentative. However, based on these, and a few other surveys published in medical journals, it is probable that all unnecessary JW deaths form blood loss since 1945 total tens of thousands — not hundreds of thousands.

An article on the AJWRB "Advocates for Jehovah's Witnesses for Reform on Blood" website, estimates that between 1961 and 2016 the doctrine led to 33,246 JWs deaths, an average of 596 per year, including 1220 in just 2016.

Burac Zeybec et al (2016) give an estimate of more than 1100 JWs deaths worldwide per year from rejecting medically necessary blood transfusions and cite as their source Wilson (2005).

Their article provides hope of more JWs surviving in future as technology and therapies progress. Their Abstract says in part:

> Early diagnosis of anemia and immediate initiation of therapy are essential in patients who refuse blood transfusion. Medical management options include iron supplementation and erythropoietin. There are also some promising therapies that are in development such as antihepcidin antibodies and hemoglobin-based oxygen carriers. Options to decrease blood loss include antifibrinolytics, desmopressin, recombinant factor VII, and factor concentrates. When surgery is the only option, every effort should be made to pursue minimally invasive approaches.

Death estimates need to consider that rejection of a blood transfusion is often only a <u>contributing cause</u> of death. The hospitalized JW is sick or injured when he arrives and his survival often only a <u>probability</u> even with a transfusion. For example, one entry in Table I says "3 to 15 dead". This refers to cardiovascular surgery on 542 JWs during a 20-year period and says:

> Three of the 15 deaths in this series related directly to blood loss, and postoperative anemia contributed to 12 others. (1979 Yearbook of Anesthesia, p.190)

Perhaps an estimate for JWs blood-loss deaths from 1945 to the 2020s of 30,000 to 50,000 is reasonable. If so then note that this number greatly exceeds all the deaths at Jonestown in 1979 and other known "death cults" since 1979 combined!

Tables I and II

Table 1 lists referenced deaths reported in news publications and found during one person's general reading — therefore only a small sample of what has occurred.

Table II lists unreferenced deaths mentioned in magazines, websites, letters and news-papers where the source of the information is omitted or lost. *TIDBITS* (2000 Oct/Nov), for example, reported the following without documenting where it came from:

> Domenica Asciutto died delivering her first child after refusing a potentially life saving transfusion. (p.10)

> 1 year ago, JW Thomas Branco while moving his disabled car was hit by a DUI driver. He said "I am a JW, I don't want blood under any circumstances" doctors were unable to save him. (p.8)

TABLE 1 Referenced Deaths

ADA, A Emily 61 — Australia, SA. *The Advertiser* (S.A) 1978 June 13
ALSON, John 47 — USA, California *The Modesto Bee* 1992 August 16
ANDERSEN, Dan 15 — Denmark *Ekstra Bladet* 1996 Jan. 25; w1996 2/1 15
2 Babies — Canada *The Australian* 2007 Feb. 3-4, p.16
BAEZ, Juan 17. *The Boston Herald* 1996 April 4
Baby boy England, Sheffield *Sun-Herald* 1960 March 20

BIFFLE, Lysa — USA, New York.
The New York Post 1989 December 27

BLANCHET, Frank 49; USA, California.
News Press (Santa Barbara) 1998 May 21

Boy 15; Canada, Manitoba.
The Times 1958 December 15

BROWN, Anita 25; USA, Nevada.
Contra Costa Times 1980 June 25, p.40

BUDD, Leonard 21 — Canada, Saskatchewan.
Died 1979? *Questions for Jehovah's Witnesses* (p.30) W & J Cetnar

CALLIS, Vernette R. 38; USA, New Jersey. *The Courier-News* or *Home News Tribune* c.1990

CANLE, Elihu 2; Spain.
Alternativa 2.000 March-April 1990;
Cambio 16, 1994 October 3

Child, USA.
Houston Chronicle 1995 Nov. 18 p.42A

5 Children
Awake! 1994 May 22

CHRISTIAN, J.F. Mrs 28; USA, Arizona.
Arizona Republic 1968 March 9

COBURG, Lucia 12; Aust. Melbourne.
Sydney Morning Herald 1992 March 25

COOK, Wyndham 15; South Africa.
Awake! 1991 August 22 p.15

CROCKFORD, Kelsey 2; USA, Texas.
The Houston Chronicle 1995 November 18

CULL, Ronald G. Australia, Qld.
Sydney Truth 1957 September 15

CYRENNES, Sarah 12; Canada, Ontario.
Globe and Mail (Toronto) nd. Died 1980 June 17

CRYNES, Mavis 70; Australia, Qld.
Gold Coast Bulletin, 1989 April 26

EDEMA, Patience 24. UK, London.
News, 2003, April 3
www.thisislocallondon.co.uk/news/286175.print/

EDWARDS, John 57, Schoolteacher
www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/2085195/Wife-of-dying-Jehovahs-Witness-refuses-blood-transfusion.html

FERENZ, Carol 63, New York on 1/1 2004. *The Daily Record* 2004 January 13

GALIAN, Catalina 27; Spain, Cartagena
Cambio 16 1994 October 3

GANGI, Lucia 12; Australia, Victoria.
Sydney Morning Herald 1992 March 25;
Telegraph Mirror 1992 March 25

GELEFF, Nicola 35; England, London.
The Advertiser (South Australia) 1991 March 23, p.7

GODLEVSKAYA, Elena 17; Russia.
Kievskie vedomosty 1998 September 25

Girl 13; Germany, Berlin.
The Watchtower 1971 Sept.1, p.531

GOUGH, Emma 22, England.
Daily Mail 2007 November 5

GRENCI, Cathy 34; Canada, Ontario.
The Toronto Star 1996 May 26

GROOTJES, Emily 19; England.
Daily Mirror 1996 September 24

HOOD, Brendon 4; USA, California.
Press report reproduced in *Danger At Your Door* (1987) D Magnani p.70

HUNT, Brian 49; England, London
Daily Telegraph 1992 August 28

IOANNIDES, Tully 18; Australia, Brisbane.
Herald Sun 1998 December 23;
The Australian 1998 December 22

JACKSON, Betty 24 — USA, Hempstead.
Danger At Your Door (1987) D Magnani p.70

JAUDON, Lora 29 — USA, New Jersey.
The Record pp A1 & A12 nd. Died 1989 April

JEHU, Stephen 2 days — South Australia.
Melbourne Truth 1959 May 23

JOLLEY, Ada 61; South Australia.
The Advertiser 1978 June 13

KEH, Adeline 40, England. *Daily Mail Online*, 11 November, 2014

KENNETT, Daniel 15; Canada, Ontario.
The Globe and Mail 1986 June 14

KOEHLER, Minel 19; USA, Minnesota.
Pioneer Press 1992 April 29

KISSOON, Norma 68; Braunstone Town, Leicester, England.
www.jehovahswitness.com/topic/jehovahs-witnesses-united-kingdom

KORINEK, Bill; USA, Utah.
We Left J Ws A Non-Prophet Organization (1979) E C Gruss. Died 1957 July

KOSACK, Lisa 12; Canada, Ontario.
Awake! 1994 5/22 p.14

KUMUKO 15; Canada, Alberta
The Watchtower 1995 1/15 7

LAWSON, Audrey 31; Canada, Vancouver. *The Province* 1987 Dec. 9

LEIGHTON, Yvonne 28; England.
Daily Telegraph 1993, February 5

MCAULEY, Joshua 15; England.
The Mirror 2010 May19

MAINZ, Dina 24; Denmark.
Ekstrabladet 1996 October 21

Man (Motorcyclist); UK, London.
The Advertiser (South Aust.) 1979 Jan. 8

Man 22; UK.
International Business Times
2012 June 25

Man 47; USA, California.
The Modesto Bee 1992 August 16

Man; Spain, Gerona.
El Periodico 1993 September 17

MANGIONE, Joanne 30; USA, New York.
Buffalo News Sunrise Edition 1990 Dec. 7

MARTINEZ, Lenae 12; USA, California.
Awake! 1994 May 22 p.10

MATTHEWS, Beverley 33; England. Manchester
The Guardian 2000 January 20

MAURER, Eleanor 31; USA, New York.
The News (SA) 1979 September 21;
The Boston Herald 1979 September 19

MORGAN, Dan.
1975 Yearbook JWs p.224. Died 1957

Mr A. NSW. 2009.
www.news.com.au/national/dying-jehovahs-witness-granted-right-to-refuse-dialysis-treatment/story-e6frfkp9-1225758605678

Mrs E.J. 55
Canadian Med. Ass. J. 1961 May 27 p.1189

Mrs M.C.
Canadian Medical Ass. J. 1961 May 27 p.1188

MUSCARIELLO, Samuel; died 1949;
1975 Yearbook of JWs p.223.

NIELSEN, Doreen 49; USA, Ohio.
Plain Dealer (Cleveland) 1992 May 9

no name 44
Sunday Mail (South Aust.) 1975 June 1

ORTEGA, Juan 38; USA.
Miami Herald 1988 August 31

"other Jehovah babies"; Australia.
The Sun 1960 March 25

PASSLEY, Herma 27; UK, Birmingham.
The News (South Aust.) 1966 March 16

PELZEK, Robert 22; died 1968; USA, Wisconsin.
In: *I Was Raised a Jehovah's Witness* (1997 edition) Joe Hewitt, p.127

PEOPLES, Minnie 35; USA, Rock Hill
The Charlotte Observer 1999 June 25

PERROTA, Angelique 3; New Zealand
Aukland Times 1996 August 17

PEYTON, Ms.
Discover 1988 August

PICKUP, 57 Australia.
Insight (TV program) 1991 March 7

POOLE, Thomas 37; USA, Florida.
Miami Herald 1991 March 7

RAMSEY, Mark 27; USA, Florida.
Miami Herald 1985 February 21

RAPLEY, Siman 30; Australia, Qld.
Unreferenced newspaper 1996 10/3

RATTENBURY, Kevin 14; USA, Michigan.
Plain Dealer (Cleveland) 1991 Aug.

Renata 14; Brazil.
The Watchtower 1982 August 1 p.22

Retirement-age couple; USA, San Antonio.
Mount Forest Confederate 2000 March 8

RIBERAS, Judith 14; Spain, Zaragoza
El Mundo 1994 September 17

RICKETTS, Gary 23; England.
TV Quick (London) 1992 November 7-13

RIDDELL, Rachel 31; New Zealand.
Marlborough Express 2012 Dec. 17

RUSSELL, Jadine 55; USA, California.
Los Angeles Times, 1998, December 10

SHIPPERLEY, Angela J. 36; U.K.
Harrow Times, 2004, May 11

SIERRA, Mrs M.L. Spain.
Alternativa 2.000, No. 3 July-Aug. 1990

SMITH, June M 23; Western Australia.
The Advertiser (South Aust.) 1975 Jan. 9

STEVENS, Avril F. Australia, Whyalla.
The Sun, 1965, June 8
The Advertiser (South Aust.) 1965 June 8

STRATON, Kim 33; USA, Kentucky.
Courier-Journal 1981 July 19

SULKYE, Carol 26; Canada, Ontario.
Toronto Star 1982 January 20

TEENEY, Susan 27; England.
TV Quick (London) 1993 July 31

THAMES, Cedric 23; USA, Florida.
The Orlando Sentinel 1992 August 14

TRUONG, John 24; USA, Florida.
Cox News Service 1989 July 8

TWO WITNESSES, unnamed, died "in the past fortnight" after refusing blood.
The Australian 1998 December 23

VALLAS, Marcos 13; Spain, Zaragoza.
El Mundo 1994 September 17

Vietnamese woman; USA.
Paul Blizzard web site 1996 April 16

WALKER, Joshua 16; Canada, New Brunswick.
The Daily News (Halifax), 1994 October 6

WALTER, Irene 2; Austria.
Awake! 1972 September 22 pp.17-21

WARNER, Bridget V. 21; USA, Florida.
The Morning Call 1986 April 28

WILLIAMS, Charles 33; USA, Michigan.
The Boston Globe 1981 August 9

WILSON, Dianne L. 27; South Australia.
The News 1985, January 30

WINCHESTER, Helen 75; Australia, Newcastle. 2019 September 27
Marsdens Law Group Website

Woman, 18; Australia.
The Lancet 1990? Volume 336 p.1075

Woman 26; Australia, Qld.
Herald Sun 1998 December 23 p.5; *The Australian* 1998 December 12

Woman 28 and baby, Australia.
Daily Mail 2015 April 7

Woman, 39; New Zealand.
The Advertiser 1960, May 189

Woman 44; South Australia. *Sunday Mail* (South Australia) 1974 June 2
Woman 63, U.K. *Mail Online*, December 8, 2014
Woman; Ellice Islands. *1971 Yearbook of JWs* p.131
Woman 39; New Zealand. *The Advertiser* (South Aust.) 1960 May 18
Woman 83; Norway. *Dagbladet* 1995 October 26
Woman 62; USA. *Journal of Abdominal Surgery* 1967 June p.161
Woman; USA, California. *Awake!* 1992 September 22 p.12
Woman 20; USA, Illinois. *JAMA* 1990 September; Register Star (Illinois, Rockford) 1990 September 6
Woman 88; USA, Los Angeles. *SF Sunday Examiner & Chronicle* 1982 Oct. 3
Woman; Australia, Melbourne. *The Advertiser* (S.A.) 2000 July 28; *Sun Herald* 2000 July 28
Woman; Zambia. Times of Zambia 1997 September 26
YEATTS, Adrian 15; Canada. *Awake!* 1994 5/22 8
Awake! 1994 May 22. Of 24 youngsters shown on the front cover , three are included in this list.
3 to 15 dead. USA. *JAMA* 1977 September 19 pp 1256-1258

TABLE 2—Unreferenced Deaths

ASCIUTTO, Domenica, Melbourne. 2000 July 30
BAZOWSKY, Alexander, 5; New Brunswick. 1989 July
BOE, Dylan; Canada, Saskatchewan. 2001
BRANCO, Thomas; 2000
BRANNAN, Devon, 30s; USA, Ohio. 1986
BROOKS, Kelly; USA, Michigan. 1984
BROWN, Jared, 10?; Canada, Ontario. 1989
CHRISTIAN, Mrs J. USA, Arizona. 1968 March
CLAY, Barbara, 78; USA, Mississippi, 1997 Sept. 6
CONROY, Estella 50+; USA, Missouri, 1990 September 3
CRABTREE, George; USA, Michigan, 1966
GONZALEZ, Nelida, 55; Puerto Rico, 1992 November
GRANVOLD, Judy, 38; USA, California. 1985 May
HARTLEY, Michelle, 23; USA, Florida. 1983
HUGHES, Bethany, 17; CANADA, Alberta, 2002
HUMPHRIES, Eliza 37; England, London.
JAUDON, Lora, 29; USA, New Jersey. 1989 April
MACDONALD, Donald, 27; USA, California. 1985 May
MANGIONE, Joanne, 30; USA, Buffalo. 1990 Dec. 6
MAXFIELD, Janice, 34; Washington, Seattle. 1977
MENDEZ, Tony; USA.1995 June 6
MIRANDA, Ernie, 30s; USA, New York.1989 Dec. 27
MOODY, Arvid, 68; USA, Massachusetts.1978 June
PARKER, Buck, 1 day; USA, New York. 1986 Feb. 11
PERRICONE, John 3; USA, Jersey City. 1961 March 4
RICKETTS, Gary, 23; England. 1992 March 23,
SCHULTZ, Tammy 26; USA, Oregon. 1995 May 24
WALTER, Irene 2; Austria. 1970 November 5
SWISHER, Walter, 37; USA, Indiana. 1994 May 6
TOUNG, Mrs; USA, California. 1996
WILLIAMS, Charles
WILLIAMS, Mary, 41; 1971 November
Woman 21; Ghana. 2014 January 3
Woman; USA, Chicago. 1997 November
Woman; USA Chicago. 1997 December 18

The above-listed deaths of JWs in blood-loss situations were found during general reading of newspapers and journals and the Web. Therefore the listed deaths are only a tiny sample of what a thorough or systematic search should find.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS

JWs believe that the Bible prohibits ingesting blood and that a Christian should not accept blood transfusions or donate or store his own blood for transfusion even if his life is at stake:

> Similarly, God's command to 'abstain from blood' rules out ingesting it by the mouth as well as through injections into the veins...

So their everlasting destiny is tied up in their faithfulness to Jehovah. This includes their being obedient to what he says about blood." (w1978 6/15 24)

Witnesses believe that blood removed from the body should be disposed of, so they do not accept autotransfusion of predeposited blood. Techniques for intraoperative collection or hemodilution that involve blood storage are objectionable to them. However, many Witnesses permit the use of dialysis and heart-lung equipment (non-blood-prime) as well as intraoperative salvage where the extracorporeal circulation is uninterrupted; the physician should consult with the individual patient as to what his conscience dictates. (*How Can Blood Save Your Life?* 1990, p.27)

A final example of autologous blood use involves recovering and reusing blood during surgery. Equipment is used to aspirate blood from the wound, pump it out through a filter (to remove clots or debris) or a centrifuge (to eliminate fluids), and then direct it back into the patient. Many Christians have been very concerned whether in such salvage there might be any brief interruption of blood flow. Yet, as mentioned, a more Biblical concern is whether the blood escaping into a surgical wound is still part of the person. Does the fact that the blood has flowed from his circulatory system into the wound mean that it should be 'poured out,' like the blood mentioned at Leviticus 17:13? If an individual believes so, he would probably refuse to permit such blood salvage. Yet, another Christian (who also would not let blood flow from him, be stored for some time, and later be put back into him) might conclude that a circuit with recovery from a surgical site and ongoing reinfusion would not violate his trained conscience. (w1989 3/1 31)

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS DECLINED — NEWS REPORTS

Newspaper reports of JWs dying unnecessarily when a blood transfusion could have saved their life began appearing by 1950. Here are two from 1957 and 1993:

DIED FOR FAITH

(Sydney Truth 1957, September 15)

BRISBANE, Saturday. — The cremation of a Jehovah's Witness today climaxed the amazing story of a man who refused, to the last, blood transfusions which could have saved his life.

He was Ronald George Cull.

Last year, journalists from all over Australia came to Cull's death-bed to appraise the stoicism that marked his death.

This followed a Truth disclosure in December, 1955, of Cull's stand on refusing to accept transfusions because of his beliefs.

He had then been in a Brisbane general hospital bed for five months.

Doctors had told him that, unless he consented to transfusions to replace blood lost through internal bleeding, he would die.

He replied: "If I die, I still have my faith."

Doctors were helpless as Cull chose death rather than deny the belief of his sect.

World-wide controversy followed publication of the Truth story…

He lingered for more than two years, determined not to accept the only treatment which could have kept him alive.

Jehovah's Witness Bleeds
To Death After Giving Birth

(London Daily Telegraph,
February 5, 1993)

A JEHOVAH'S witness bled to death after the birth of her second child because religious principles prevented her from having a transfusion. Mrs. Yvonne Leighton, 28, and her husband, Gordon, had signed forms refusing hospital staff permission to give her blood.

Doctors had to stand by helplessly as she hemorrhaged during a simple operation for new mothers, 10 days after her son was born. She died over a protracted period of several hours as Mr. Leighton and other relatives waited by her bedside at Sunderland General Hospital.

A hospital spokesman said: "She was conscious for most of the time, but she refused to have a transfusion. She was given blood alternatives, but when you are suffering that much, you need blood.

She was prepared to do anything but have a blood transfusion."

Her fellow Jehovah's Witnesses were so anxious to ensure that the hospital staff complied with her wishes that a legal representative was sent to the hospital to ensure the transfusion was not carried out…

Mrs. Leighton, who also has a six-year-old daughter, Rachel, went into the hospital on Wednesday for the operation known as dilation and curettage. It involves scrapping away the fining of the womb and is commonly carried out to treat or diagnose the cause of heavy menstrual bleeding.

The hospital spokesman said: "It's very simple and done every day. The consequences of not having a blood transfusion were explained to her and her family on three occasions.

"The anesthetist was continually trying to get her to change her mind. The medical team were distraught.

"A full medical team were present throughout her treatment and all possible steps were taken to save her bearing in mind the wishes of her and her family.

"It is a very difficult situation for medical staff. But if they were to give the transfusion they would have been breaking the law and open to a charge of criminal assault."

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS DOCTRINE

The Governing Body teaches that the refusal of transfusions of whole blood or its four primary components — red cells, white cells, platelets and plasma — is a biblically necessary stand and anyone who respects life as a gift from God would not sustain life with blood transfusions.

The doctrine was introduced in 1944-1945, and has undergone many changes. JWs who voluntarily accept a transfusion and are deemed unrepentant are regarded as having disassociated themselves and are shunned by other members.

Rutherford

In 1925 *The Golden Age* commended a man in Britain for donating blood 45 times. (g1925 7/29 683) In 1940 *Consolation* reported about a woman who accidentally shot herself in her heart and survived major surgery during which a physician donated two pints of his own blood for transfusion.

Rutherford wrote: "The life is in the blood." (w1927 12/15) He claimed that eating of blood was forbidden to Noah's descendants forever. (Salvation 1939, 282, 293, 295) However, Rutherford never applied this to blood transfusions.

In 1940 Rutherford permitted the viewpoint: "…blood transfusion has saved many lives." (g1940 10/16 11 Australian edition)

In September 1945 the Dutch edition of *Consolation* stated:

> God never issued regulations which prohibit the use of drugs, inoculations or blood transfusions. It is an invention of people, who, like the Pharisees, leave Jehovah's mercy and love aside.

Vaccination and Blood Transfusion

Rutherford endorsed a lot of criticism of vaccinations. This might have predisposed his successors against blood transfusions:

> Avoid serum inoculations and vaccinations as they pollute the blood stream with their filthy pus. (g1929 11/13 107)

> We do well to bear in mind that among the drugs, serums, vaccines, surgical operations, etc., of the medical profession, there is nothing of value save an occasional surgical procedure. Their so-called "science" grew out of Egyptian black magic and has not lost its demonological character... (g1931 8/5 727)

> The life is in the blood, and as vaccination is a direct injection of animal matter in the blood stream, vaccination is a direct violation of the law of Jehovah God. (g1935 4/24 471)

By 1944 F.W. Franz, the new vice president of the WBTS, had absorbed the anti-vaccination propaganda for 23 years. He may have seen inconsistency in opposing a small "injection of animal matter in the blood stream" by vaccination while permitting large injections of "animal matter" by transfusion.

Vaccinations had been extensively administered since the early 19th century and in the USA were compulsory for school children. This meant that virtually all human blood was, by the JWs viewpoint, "polluted

with filthy pus" and its transfusion a practice derived from "Egyptian black magic".

Franz therefore opposed blood transfusions but looked for biblical justifications and wrote:

> [12] Not only as a descendant of Noah, but now also as one bound by God's law to Israel which incorporated the everlasting covenant regarding the sanctity of life-sustaining blood, the stranger was forbidden to eat or drink blood, whether by transfusion or by the mouth. (Gen. 9: 4; Lev. 17:10-14) (w1944 12/1 362)

In 1945 this apparent ban on JWs from having blood transfusions became clearer:

> [24] The Bible sets out another reason which makes wholly improper the drinking of animal blood. The Bible calls it to our notice in the typical sacrifices of animal victims offered in worship to Jehovah God by the Jews. At Leviticus 3:16, 17 God's law says concerning special parts of the sacrifice: "The priest shall burn them upon the altar : it is the food of the offering made by fire for a sweet savour : all the fat is the Lord's. It shall be a perpetual statute for your generations throughout all your dwellings, that ye eat neither fat nor blood." On the same basis that the fat was the Lord's the blood was also the Lord's, because the life of the flesh is in the blood and the Lord God Jehovah is the Life-giver. Hence the penalty, as next stated: "For whosoever eateth the fat of the beast, of which men offer an offering made by fire unto the LORD, even the soul [the creature] that eateth it shall be cut off from his people. Moreover ye shall eat no manner of blood, whether it be of fowl or of beast, in any of your dwellings. Whatsoever soul it be that eateth any manner of blood, even that soul shall be cut off from his people."—Lev. 7:25-27.
>
> [25] The prohibition against eating or drinking the blood applied not alone to animals offered in sacrifice upon the altar, but to all animals consumed for food. "Only be sure that thou eat not the blood: for the blood is the life [*nephesh;* soul]; and thou mayest not eat the life [*nephesh;* soul] with the flesh. Thou shalt not eat it; thou shalt pour it upon the earth as water. Thou shalt not eat it : that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, when thou shalt do that which is right in the sight of the LORD. And thou shalt offer thy burnt offerings, the flesh and the blood, upon the altar of the LORD thy God : and the blood of thy sacrifices shall be poured out [not anywhere upon the ground, but] upon the altar of the LORD thy God, and thou shalt eat the flesh."—Deut. 12: 16, 22-25, 27; *Rotherham,* margin. ...
>
> [29] Seeing, then, that the Most High and Holy God gave plain instructions as to the disposition of blood, in harmony with his everlasting covenant made with Noah and all his descendants; and seeing that the only use of blood that he authorized in order to furnish life to humankind was the use of it as a propitiation or atonement for sin; and seeing that it was to be done upon his holy altar or at his mercy seat, and not by taking such blood directly into the human body; therefore it behooves all worshipers of Jehovah who seek eternal life in his new world of righteousness to respect the sanctity of blood and to conform themselves to God's righteous rulings concerning this vital matter. (w1945 7/1 200-201)

A point not considered is that "the blood of thy sacrifices shall be poured out upon the altar of the LORD thy God" does not seem achieved by dying from blood-loss during surgery!

1945 to 1961

It was not yet (in 1945) made clear that JWs had to reject blood transfusion even if it meant bleeding to death. Clarification came in 1947:

> Blosco Muscariello tells us: "Shortly after getting out of prison [where he was confined for his Christian neutrality], my younger brother, Samuel, contracted the kind of strep throat that results in uremic poisoning. The doctors prescribed an operation—with blood transfusions, of course—giving him two years at the most to live without the operation and the blood. Sam walked out on them. This was in the year 1947... In exactly two years, Sam was taken back to the hospital, dying. Under pressure, I went to his bedside and said, 'Sam, they want to give you blood.' Half drugged, half conscious, he tried to get out of bed [to avoid receiving blood, which never was administered to him] ... our family, though saddened [by his death], was strengthened by Sam's clear thinking and integrity to Jehovah even until death." (Yearbook 1975, 223)

Objection to the Law of Moses

A serious objection to Franz's argument it that it was based on the Law of Moses which JWs

also believed is no longer in force. (Ephesians 2:15)

Even under that law there were exceptions that permitted blood to be eaten in small amounts. If a starving Israelite found a dead animal he was allowed to eat it although it had not been drained of blood, but he would be ceremonially unclean until evening. King David's men also ate un-bled meat but were not executed, merely "unclean" until evening.

After an animal's blood is poured out, substantial blood remains in the meat which suggests that the law does not totally ban eating blood. If a total ban on blood was intended then the eating of meat would have to be forbidden.

The point that the Law of Moses is no longer in force was answered in 1951 with the argument that "blood is forbidden in other places":

> The Mosaic Law required that the fat of sacrificial animals be burned on the altar, as shown by the verses that precede the one quoted in the question. The fat was specially suitable for this, since it would burn readily. However, the point to be made here in answer to the question is that the prohibition regarding the fat is a feature of the Mosaic Law. Whereas blood is forbidden in places other than the Law covenant, fat is not; hence when the Law was abolished by its fulfillment the prohibition on fat ended, just as on eating pigs, rabbits, eels, etc. (w1951 7/1 415)

Genesis 9 and Acts 15

The "other places" where eating of blood is forbidden are Genesis 9 and Acts 15.

Genesis 9:3-4 says:

> Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you… Only, you shall not eat flesh with its life, that is its blood.

This could be taken as a command against eating living animals while they are still alive. But let's run with the JWs assumption that it means slaughtered animals have to be drained of their blood before the meat is cooked.

Genesis 9:1-7 is addressed to Noah and his sons and therefore applies, JWs claim, to all humans for all time. But if it applies to all humans for all time then it disagrees with Deuteronomy 14:21 where Israelites are permitted to give unbled dead animals to foreigners to eat. Furthermore, Genesis 9 deals with the blood of animals that "shall be food for you" and people are not animals "that shall be food for you".

In Acts 15 the context is the Jerusalem Council which convened to decide whether Gentile Christians needed to obey the Law of Moses, in particular circumcision, for their salvation. (Acts 15:1-6)

The Council's decision was:

> For it has seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us to impose on you no further burden than these essentials: that you abstain from what has been sacrificed to idols and from blood and from what is strangled and from fornication. (Acts 15:29)

"No further burden than these essentials" implies that circumcision is not necessary for salvation. However, circumcision was not just commanded in the Law of Moses but also in Genesis 17:9-14 which was before the Mosaic Law. Circumcision therefore should, if *Watchtower* logic on Genesis 9:3-4 is correct, have remained in force.

Some commentators have also argued that "abstain from blood" means "abstain from murder" and therefore implies nothing about transfusions.

Another point is that the four "necessary things" of Acts 15:28-29 were a "burden" or "yoke" from the Law of Moses. (Acts 15:10) They were "necessary" to maintain peace between Christians and Jews. And since the Law was passing away (Hebrews 8:13) it follows that the four "necessary" abstentions were temporary. Indeed one of the four "burdens" was to abstain from "things sacrificed to idols" but this abstention did not apply when Paul wrote I Corinthians 8.

From this perspective, of the "burdens" being temporary, the fourth "burden" — to abstain from "fornication" — tells Gentile Christians in Judea to use Jewish channels to get married since for Jews not to do so would be viewed as fornication.

These points get into murky areas of interpreting how to apply Old Testament law to Christianity, and therefore Acts 15 is not a reasonable basis for letting thousands of people bleed to death.

Vaccination ban repealed

In 1952 the WBTS ban on vaccinations, which was until then the "law of Jehovah God", was repealed.

The spin-off doctrine — the ban on blood — was retained. To cancel the ban on blood when some JWs had already died from it would have questioned the authenticity of the WTS leaders as representing "God's prophet". The deaths were also stimulating free publicity and public outrage helped to unify the ranks of JWs as effectively as persecution sometimes did. Furthermore, other doctrinal revisions were taking place — Israel was a nation again which Rutherford had predicted would never happen, and the doctrine that the "ancient worthies" would reappear before Armageddon was discarded.

Therefore, the ban on blood may have been retained for the free publicity and to avoid changing too much "Bible truth" too fast and risking mass defection.

In 1961 acceptance of blood transfusion became an excommunication offense: "The receiver of blood transfusion must be cut off from God's people by excommunication or disfellowshipping." (w1961 1/15 64)

Blood transfusions risks

In the 1950s and 1960s the WTS began to point to alleged dangers of blood transfusion:

> And let the transfusion enthusiasts with a savior-complex ponder the fact that on many occasions transfusions do harm, spread disease, and frequently cause deaths, which, of course, are not publicized. (w1951 7/1 416)

In 1961 *The Watchtower* cited Dr Alonzo Jay Shadman claiming that a person's blood:

> …contains all the peculiarities of the individual... This includes hereditary taints, disease susceptibilities, poisons due to personal living, eating and drinking habits... The poisons that produce the impulse to commit suicide, murder, or steal are in the blood. (w1961 9/15 564)

Shadman, authored *Who Is Your Doctor And Why* (1958). He supported the pseudo-science of homeopathy, opposed vaccinations and claimed there is no such thing as a virus. He was unrepresentative of medical science; his views often unscientific; a medical quack.

Further bans on blood-use

Awake! in September 1956 stated, "certain blood fractions ... also come under the Scriptural ban". This was reiterated in 1961 but an exception made for vaccines whose manufacture required the use of blood fractions:

> The entire modern medical practice involving the use of blood is objectionable from the Christian standpoint. Therefore the taking of a blood transfusion, or, in lieu of that, the infusing of some blood fraction to sustain one's life is wrong.
>
> As to the use of vaccines and other substances that may in some way involve the use of blood in their preparation, it should not be concluded that the Watch Tower Society endorses these and says that the practice is right and proper. However, vaccination is a virtually unavoidable practice in many segments of modern society, and the Christian may find some comfort under the circumstances in the fact that this use is not in actuality a feeding or nourishing process, which was specifically forbidden when God said that man was not to eat blood, but it is a contamination of the human system.
>
> So, as was stated in *The Watchtower* of September 15, 1958, page 575, "It would therefore be a matter of individual judgment whether one accepted such types of medication or not." That is still the Society's viewpoint on the matter. (w1961 9/1 670)

In 1964 JWs were prohibited from obtaining transfusions for pets, or using fertilizer containing blood, and JWs doctors and nurses were prohibited from administering blood transfusions.

In 1982 the *Watchtower* declared it wrong to allow a leech to feed on one's blood:

> …it would not be proper for a Christian to permit leeches to draw his blood. (Proverbs 30:15) Even where this was urged for medical reasons and the leeches would later be disposed of, the use of leeches would involve deliberately feeding blood to these creatures. That would conflict with the Bible's indication that blood, being sacred and representing life, should be disposed of if it is removed from a body. (w1982 6/11 31)

Statistics.

Deaths of JWs due to rejecting blood transfusions probably number thousands

rather than (as claimed by some critics) hundreds of thousands. (See: *BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS, DEATHS FROM REJECTION OF*)

The total would be higher if all JWs babies who needed blood had been allowed to die but most were saved by court intervention. Many adult JWs were also saved by doctors ignoring their "No blood" request, but nowadays to ignore such a request could get the doctor and/or hospital sued.

JWs argue that they are spared many dangers associated with blood transfusions such as mismatched blood, serum hepatitis, and other problems. In this they ignore the distinction between risk and comparative risk. Every activity has risks. In South Australia a man sun-bathed on a beach and was killed by lightning. Some people choke on their food. However, governments do not therefore ban people from sun-bathing and eating food. If eating were banned, fewer would choke to death but deaths from starvation would skyrocket.

Estimates in medical journals of the proportion of blood recipients who die from the transfusion have varied from about 1 in a thousand i.e. 0.1% to much lower estimates.

If one patient in a thousand is killed by the transfusion what percentage of transfusions are life-saving?

In the 20th century about 10% or 1/10 of blood recipients received more than four units of blood. Most blood recipients who required more than 4 units would have died if given non-blood alterative treatments. Therefore we can say that at least 10% of transfusions are life-saving. This does not mean that 90% of blood recipients died; rather 90% would have done equally well with alternative treatments.

Dividing 10% by 0.1% gives 100, which means that blood transfusions saved at least 100 times more people than they killed.

Doctrine repealed?

To allow someone to needlessly die and claim this was done out of respect for life and for the Bible, is deemed absurd by many critics.

The Governing Body, however, cannot discard their blood-ban doctrine totally because this might inspire compensation claims from relatives of those who needlessly died, perhaps hundreds of lawsuits. The resulting publicity would massively undermine the Governing Body's claim to be God's only genuine channel for conveying Bible truth.

Although the reasons why JWs oppose blood transfusions are mistaken, they may in a sense win the debate if technology leads to "bloodless surgery" or produces an "artificial" blood as safe as real blood and transfusions of blood therefore decline in popularity. Perhaps the hope of this continuation is what has kept them adhered to the doctrine for so long.

Ironically, advances in medical technology are made by people with university education and scientific training — qualifications whose acquisition the JW leaders have criticized as wrongful use of time due to the nearness of Armageddon!

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS FORCED on ADULTS

The European Court of Human Rights has said:

> The freedom to accept or refuse specific medical treatment, or to select an alternative form of treatment, is vital to the principles of self-determination and personal autonomy. A competent adult patient is free to decide ... not to have a blood transfusion. However, for this freedom to be meaningful, patients must have the right to make choices that accord with their own views and values, regardless of how irrational, unwise or imprudent such choices may appear to others.

An adult patient who states his decision not to receive blood to his surgeon(s) prior to receiving treatment must have his decision respected. If the person's decision is ignored the doctor and/or hospital risk court procedure and penalties. The *News-Sun* reported:

Court Says Hospital Erred:

> A hospital that gave a life-saving blood transfusion to a woman who had refused it on religious grounds acted in violation of her constitutional rights, the state Supreme Court ruled Monday.
>
> The patient's "common law right of bodily self-determination was entitled to respect and protection," the court ruled in a unanimous opinion that could serve as a guide for all Connecticut hospitals in the future.
>
> Nelly E. Vega, a Jehovah's Witness, began bleeding severely after giving birth to her first child at Stamford Hospital in August 1994. Doctors could not give her a transfusion because she

and her husband had signed a form refusing it on religious grounds.

Hospital officials got an emergency order from a Stamford Superior Court judge during the middle of the night and went ahead with the transfusion. They said it was necessary to save the woman's life and because the baby needed its mother.

But the Supreme Court said the lower court erred. (1996, April 9)

The National Law Journal in 2002 reported:

Jehovah's Witness Wins New Trial in Blood Transfusion Case
South Carolina high court opinion is in line with precedent in other states

A Jehovah's Witness seeking damages for receiving a blood transfusion against his wishes — a procedure the surgeon claimed saved the man's life — will get a new trial, the South Carolina Supreme Court decided.

The court reversed a trial judge who granted the vascular surgeon a directed verdict on claims of breach of contract, lack of informed consent, malpractice and medical battery. The surgeon had testified that he knew the patient was a Jehovah's Witness but got proper authorization for the transfusion from the man's mother after the patient became unconscious and lost 30 percent of his blood.

In Line With Precedent

The state high court's decision is in line with opinions in at least three other states that have affirmed the right of religious patients to dictate the extent of their medical care, said Donald T. Ridley, associate general counsel for the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York. Watchtower is the administrative organization for 6 million Jehovah's Witnesses worldwide.

"South Carolina just adds on to the growing body of law ... that shows you do respect a patient's decision that is clear and based on their religious values," Ridley said. "It kind of adds to the momentum that's been growing since the mid-'80s."

The surgeon's lawyers, attorneys with the Columbia, S.C., firm of Richardson, Plowden, Carpenter & Robinson, did not return calls.

Charles E. Carpenter Jr. had argued before the South Carolina Supreme Court in April that the patient should have used a living will to dictate permissible care in critical situations. The hospital's forms applied only to elective surgery, he said.

The plaintiff, Charles Harvey, had surgery in 1997 to remove a blockage in his carotid artery. Before the procedure, he signed several forms refusing blood and blood products and acknowledging that he understood the potentially life-threatening risks of doing so. His doctor, Glen Strickland, testified that he was aware of Harvey's religious beliefs but said Harvey had told him he'd consider a transfusion.

Harvey, a Jehovah's Witness since 1995, believes the Bible's respect for blood and life prohibits transfusions…

While recovering in the hospital after the surgery, Harvey suffered a stroke. He underwent additional surgery authorized by his mother — listed on his medical paperwork as his emergency contact — and bled heavily, losing as much as a third of his blood…

Harvey, a skilled machinist, recovered completely.

The case went to trial in 2000. The judge issued a directed verdict for the defense on claims of breach of contract and lack of informed consent. When the jury deadlocked, the judge granted a directed verdict for the surgeon on the remaining claims of malpractice and medical battery. The judge was wrong on all counts, the state's high court held, saying a jury should decide the issues, *Harvey v. Strickland*, No. 25491 (S.C. Sup. Ct.).

The opinion by Justice John H. Waller Jr. rejected Strickland's claim that he could not be held liable because he obtained a relative's consent. He cited the state's Health Care Consent Act, which affirms "a legislative intent that a patient's wishes against medical treatments or intervention, when made known to a physician prior to surgery, must be followed by the attending physician." …
(Bell, June D. *The National Law Journal*, July 23, 2002)

The principle is now widely established that adult patients have the right to decide which treatments to receive or reject, and cannot be overruled by their surgeon even if their decision is likely to lead to their death.

Even if unconscious and unable to make rational decisions a patient's prior decision not to accept blood transfusion made while still mentally alert is likely to be respected.

Wheeler (2014) reported the death of a 63-year-old JW woman in England. Doctors applied for permission to withhold a blood transfusion after she "clearly lacked" the mental capacity to make decisions for herself. Mr Justice Peter Jackson ruled that her decision was made earlier when she did have the mental capacity.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS FORCED on CHILDREN

An article published in *The Australian* in 2008 said in part:

June 16, 2008
VANCOUVER: A Canadian judge has ruled against a Jehovah's Witness couple who opposed blood transfusions for their premature sextuplets, saying children's rights overrule their parents' beliefs when lives are in danger.

Donald Brenner, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of British Columbia, ruled yesterday that child welfare authorities were right to briefly seize the couple's four surviving children so they could receive doctor-recommended blood transfusions that their parents had refused.

He said state intervention was justified because existing science and medical assessments of the infants made transfusions "essential to preserve the infants' lives or to prevent serious or permanent impairment of their health".

The parents of the sextuplets had argued the province of British Columbia violated their rights under Canada's Charter of Rights and Freedoms…

Justice Brenner … said: "It is difficult to see how the charter rights of the parents, which they say entitle them to determine the course of medical treatment for their children in this case, could trump the charter rights of the infants to receive medical treatment to prevent their serious personal injury or death." …

www.missionandjustice.org/ruling-against-witness-parents/
www.theaustralian.news.com.au/story/0,25197,23867738-2703,00.html

---

The Advertiser
September 5, 1975

Pensacola, Florida — A Judge last night gave doctors permission to give blood transfusions to premature twin girls despite objections from the infants' parents that the transfusions would violate their religious beliefs as Jehovah's Witness sect members.

Judge T. Bruno, of the Juvenile Court, appointed lawyer Mr. J. Cohen as legal guardian to approve the transfusions if doctors needed them to save the critically ill three-day-old girls.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS FORCED on TEENAGERS

JW parents of a teenager may state that a decision to reject blood is the teenager's and if they support his stand a court decision could nowadays go either way. Here some examples of teenagers rejecting a transfusion:

Transfusion — By Law
(The Advertiser, 1961, August 3)

PERTH, August 2.

The life of a 17-year old Jehovah's Witness has been saved by a blood transfusion which he refused, but which was given to him at the law's insistence.

This is the first time in WA that the provisions of the Child Welfare Act have been used to enable a doctor to give a life-saving transfusion when the patient, and parents, have refused it because of religious beliefs.

Doctors said today that without the transfusion the youth would have died within an hour or two of his admission to Boddington Hospital, 77 miles south-east of Perth, with a rifle bullet wound. The bullet had entered the right chest and punctured the lung.

A swift transfusion was his only hope, but the youth, who was conscious, told the doctor he was a Jehovah's Witness and therefore refused a transfusion.

The parents also refused the transfusion for their son.

A magistrate and the Child Welfare Department were immediately notified.

The magistrate drove the 50 miles to Boddington from Narrogin, and invoked the relevant portion of the Child Welfare Act, which enabled him to declare as neglected and a ward of the State any child whose mental, physical or moral welfare was likely to be in jeopardy…

While the legal requirements were being compiled with the hospital staff were preparing for a transfusion, and as soon as they received word the boy was given three pints of blood, which they say, saved his life.

Today the boy is well.

Judge orders transfusion
(The Daily News—1996, June 14)

MONTREAL (CP) — A 15-year-old Jehovah's Witness must undergo blood transfusion to treat his leukemia, a judge rule yesterday after visiting the teen in hospital.

Justine Claude Benoit said he wanted to go to the Montreal Children's Hospital to speak privately with the teen after his parents told court the decision to accept blood was up to their son.

After meeting with the teen, Benoit ruled that the 15-year-old should receive blood transfusion for his own good, even if the decision was contested by a higher court.

"Considering the age of the boy, that treatment could prolong his life, and considering the love we have for him, I will grant the hospital's request," Benoit said…

Dr. Sylvain Baruchel told court his patient would have a 35 per cent chance of survival if he accepted blood transfusions and could die in several months if he didn't.

Dad of Alberta girl who fought transfusions lashes out at Jehovah's Witnesses
(Reference unknown, 2002, September 6)

EDMONTON (CP)—The grieving father of a 17-year-old Jehovah's Witness girl who died of leukemia says he intends to sue the religious group, claiming it destroyed his family and caused his daughter to fight against blood transfusions.

One day after Bethany Hughes died of blood cancer, her father, Lawrence Hughes, called a press conference and lashed out at the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society … for what happened to his family…

Hughes had split with the religious group and his family, soon after consenting to blood transfusions for the teen. His wife and daughter moved from the Calgary home last June and Hughes has since filed for divorce…

Hughes contends that since mid-July, when Bethany went to Edmonton for chemotherapy treatment without blood transfusions, he hadn't had access to his daughter…

Doctors gave Bethany a 40 to 50 per cent chance of beating the cancer with intensive chemotherapy and blood transfusions…

Judge overrules teen on blood transfusion
(The Weekend Australian, September 1-2, 2018, p.7

A pregnant Jehovah's Witness teenager who refused to receive a blood transfusion during childbirth has been overruled by a Victorian judge, who found her doctors could administer blood as a last resort to save her life…

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS IDENTITY CARD
In 1990 a 20-year-old lapsed JW female declined a blood transfusion after a car accident. A judge ruled that the mother had pressured her and that her ability to decide for herself was impaired by the medical drugs she received in her treatment.

The Governing Body's response to doctors administering blood transfusions to unconscious JWs who lacked the capacity to make a decision, was to have JWs sign a "no blood" card which they carry with them.

The card is the size of a credit card. It is signed by the JW carrier and states his wish not to be given a blood transfusion. New cards are reissued to all JWs each January.

The cards are of doubtful legal validity because:

1. It is unclear whether JWs who sign have made a personal decision or whether they signed as an obligation to their Organization;
2. It is doubtful that many JWs know the comparative risks of accepting or rejecting blood transfusions, since the information in WTS publications is often biased and selective.

The Canadian case Malette vs Shulman (1990) concerned Mrs Malette who was injured in a car accident, had the "no blood" card on her person, and her daughter further explained to the doctor that her mother would not want a transfusion under any circumstances. The doctor ignored both the card and the daughter and administered blood. Mrs Malette recovered and sued the doctor for assault. Although the transfusion was "reasonable" and saved Mrs Malette's life the doctor was found to have assaulted the woman and was ordered to pay $20,000. (Eburn 1999)

In the mid 1990s the Governing Body began to emphasize the signing of a form for the refusal of blood and for assigning power of attorney to someone who will support the request for no blood in the event of the JW being unconscious and unable to speak for himself. The form includes references to law publications and also lists WTS-approved alternatives to blood transfusion.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS MISREPRESENTATION TORT

Kerry Louderback-Wood in an essay titled "Jehovah's Witnesses, Blood Transfusions, and the Tort of Misrepresentation" (Baylor University's *Journal of Church and State*, December 13, 2005) discusses the potential vulnerability of the JWs legal corporations to claims for compensation because of the religion's possible misrepresentation of the medical risks of blood transfusions.

According to the essay, constitutional guarantees of freedom of religion do not remove the legal responsibility regarding misrepresenting secular fact. Awards to those who have lost relatives as a result of the anti-blood stand could cripple the organization financially.

Perhaps, however, the Governing Body has covered this possibility by getting JWs to claim they oppose transfusions as a free choice based on their Bible-trained conscience.

The Governing Body also issued new directives on blood to JWs congregations in January 2006, replacing the 1995 directives which were removed from organizational files.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS RAPE?

The Watchtower in 1993 told of a 94-year-old JW woman who refused a blood transfusion and who told the judge: "The doctors are ignoring my wishes and are attempting to violate my conscience ... so I must resist just as if they were raping me." (w1993 6/15 19)

This is a teaching of the Governing Body, that an unwanted blood transfusion, even if it saves life, is comparable to rape. They usually promote this viewpoint, as in the above example, by quoting a follower who makes such a statement.

When other JWs read the comparison in their publications they take it as "truth" and repeat it. A JW whose life is saved by an unwanted blood transfusion is likely to declare, "I feel like I've been raped."

The Weekend Australian quoted the mother of a pregnant 17-year-old JW girl who might require life-saving blood when giving birth:

> "Being forced to have that done against her will would be something like having violence done to her or being raped." (September 1-2, 2018, p.7)

In this case a judge ruled that "doctors could administer blood as a last resort." Without such a ruling it's illegal in Australia for doctors to override an adult patient's decision or even a teenager's decision to reject blood, and some doctors have faced lawsuits.

Is the rape-transfusion comparison valid?

Is the comparison of an illegal but life-saving blood transfusion to rape reasonable?

No. The intentions, motives, methods, locations, circumstances, consequences, and legal penalties are all different.

There are other situations in which people are compelled for their own good to act contrary to what they choose and it's not compared to rape. Dementia patients may want to abscond from the care center; children may not want to attend school; gamblers may have controls imposed on how much they can lose; someone about to commit suicide may be stopped; etc. None of these actions for the person's benefit, even if unwanted, are considered criminal assault like rape.

Several former JWs who were sexually abused or raped by congregation members as youngsters, and later expelled and ostracized for publicising the elders' cover-up of the abuse, have argued that to be expelled and ostracized after being raped was like being "raped again"!

The rape comparison in this instance is more intelligent because sexual abuse, its cover-up, and ostracism are all abusive actions and not life-saving.

BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS SANCTIONED IN 2026

In September 2026 the Governing backed down substantially in their opposition to blood transfusions. They OK'd the four major blood components still prohibited i.e. red cells, white cells, platelets and plasma as well as autologous blood.

Only transfusions of whole blood with all its original components remained prohibited, a type of transfusion rarely needed.

In the 20th century many JWs who required blood accepted and merely kept quiet about it.

In 1961 the WTS introduced disfellowshipping with shunning of non-compliant JWs. The Governing Body hardened their position by:

- Publishing more articles and brochures on the topic;
- Issuing Medical Directive cards which JWs signed and carried on their person..

Varela et al (2003) write: "blood transfusions are performed in up to 7% of Jehovah's Witnesses cases…"

The Governing Body further increased the pressure on JWs to conform by introducing:

- Hospital Information Services;
- Hospital Liaison Committees;
- Patient Visitation Groups

From 2004 the WTS informed its US congregations that the Health Insurance Portability and Accountability Act allows hospitals to inform elders serving on Patient Visitation Groups about JWs admitted to hospital, but the patients would need to make their consent to visitation known.

The intervention of Hospital Liaison Committees added pressure on JW patients and their families to refuse blood-based treatment. Some JWs agreed to a transfusion but changed their mind when Committee members arrive. JWs patients also know that Hospital Liaison Committees will break confidentiality and inform their home congregation with the consequence disfellowshipping.

Counter pressure

The Governing Body's pressure on JWs patients could have been countered if hospitals had trained counselors to visit JW patients or their families to discuss:

- Whether the patient knows which blood components are currently acceptable to JWs as this has sometimes been changed;
- Whether the entire doctrine might in future be made a matter of conscience as occurred with vaccinations, tissue transplants, and blood fractions;
- Whether the patient realizes that the prohibition on certain blood components is Organizational policy, not biblical teaching;
- Whether the patient knows of the alternative interpretations of Acts 15;
- Whether the Law of Moses applies to Christians;
- Whether the Governing Body is infallible or has made serious errors;
- Whether the patient has made arrangements for the care of his family in the event of his death (which the WTS won't compensate the family for).

All these points became moot in September 2026 with the "new light" that all transfusions except of whole blood are now OK, no longer against the Bible. This makes less than 1% of transfusion events unacceptable in Australia according to AI Copilot's numbers:

> Whole blood transfusion is no longer routine practice**.** Most Australian patients receive only the component they need, such as red cells, platelets, or plasma.
> If we were to **count** actual transfusion events involving a blood component, a reasonable approximation today would be:
> - Red blood cells: about 85%
> - Platelets: about 10%
> - Plasma: about 5%
> - **Whole blood: well under 1%**
> - White blood cells: negligible

Presumably JWs could even accept whole blood by requesting one component to be removed and transfused into him separately.

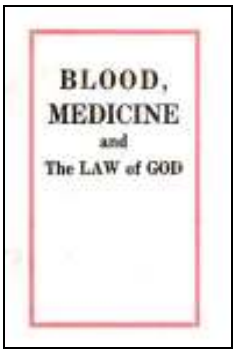
Apparently up to 50,000 JWs died in vain from blood loss in 80 years because their leaders didn't understand the Bible, and refused help

to understand, yet insisted on unquestioning obedience by their followers.

Autologous transfusions are also now OK but only of limited help. The shelf-life of whole blood is about 35 days. "For a **whole-blood donation**, the standard amount collected in Australia is 470 mL**,** about 8% of the average adult's blood volume**.** Which a regular donor of whole blood is permitted to donate once every 12 weeks." (Copilot)

This implies that a person's own stored blood can in any 84-day period amount to only 470 ml (= 1 pint) for 35 days, and zero mL for 49 days. Unlikely to be worthwhile.

BLOOD, MEDICINE AND THE LAW OF GOD (1961)



A WTS booklet in which the author claims:

- "those associated with the medical profession" believe that there probably is no other treatment as dangerous as blood transfusions. (p.19)

- "Mature Christians" (p.14) obey "the law of God" including the Law of Moses on eating blood. (Leviticus 3:17)

- When doctors override parents' wishes and give children transfusions it is because of "emotional appeals", "hastily convened sessions", "questionable truth", "emotional pleas", etc. (pp 51-53) Such transfusions are "high-handed" and "violate human rights and religious freedom". (p.5)

- Donating of blood decreases one's ability to love God. (p.8)

The last point, that depth of love depends on blood volume, is implausible besides having a biblical answer — the Bible says 'God is love' although God is not physical and therefore lacks blood!

The "violation of rights and religious freedom" argument ignores the fact that many JWs (probably over 60%) eventually leave the sect and some of these are grateful to be alive after being saved by a transfusion. A policy that forces sect-members to choose between death and excommunication-with-ostracism can itself be viewed as a violation of their religious freedom.

(See: *DEFECTION AND TRANSFUSION*)

BLOODGUILT/BLOODGUILTY

JWs use the term "blood guilty" to describe someone who can prevent an untimely death but doesn't try hard enough to do so.

Because everyone who does not join JWs is about to die at Armageddon JWs regard as "bloodguilty" and worthy of punishment any JW who does not regularly (i.e. every month if health permits) preach to the public to try to get them into "God's organization". When God kills everyone at Armageddon He will blame slack JWs for at least some of the deaths and punish them too:

> Time is fast running out. We may not be slothful nor may we procrastinate if we would keep clean from the blood of all men. Truly, woe is us if we do not take advantage of every opportunity to warn all we can. (w1960 10/1 608)

> Yes, the Witnesses realize that they would be bloodguilty if they did not declare the good news. (Ezekiel 3:18, 19) (Knowledge That Leads to Everlasting Life 1995, 105)

> The responsibility of Jehovah's Witnesses to warn people of God's coming judgment can be compared to that of Ezekiel in his time... If he as a watchman failed to sound the warning, execution would still come upon the wicked people, but their blood would be upon the negligent watchman…

> So it is with the watchman class today, the remnant of anointed followers of Jesus Christ. All of these … must never slack off from…warning of the coming execution of his judgment. In this way they avoid bloodguilt. (w1988 1/1 28)

JWs also regarded as "bloodguilty" people who donate blood or accept a blood transfusion.

BLOODIED

According to JWs, clergymen who in any way work for the military or permit church members to join the military, are "bloody" or have "bloodied their hands".

BLOODLESS SURGERY — *WALL STREET JOURNAL*

Bloodless surgery refers to a variety of techniques that reduce the need for blood transfusions including:

- Methods that reduce bleeding during surgery;
- Autologous blood salvage;
- Artificial blood.

Hundreds of hospitals nowadays have bloodless surgery programs for most sorts of operations including open-heart surgery and hip replacements, but these may fail in cases of rapid and extensive blood loss.

The *Wall Street Journal* reported:

Are Transfusions Immoral?

By Rhonda L. Rundle
Staff Reporter of The Wall Street Journal

NORWALK, Calif.—The way Ron Lapin sees it, the world is finally ready—indeed has an urgent need—for his pioneering work in "bloodless" surgery.

While most of his patients in the past 15 years have been Jehovah's Witnesses who refuse blood transfusions on religious grounds, the 48-year-old surgeon is now promoting his techniques to a broader audience, as people become increasingly fearful of blood-borne diseases ranging from hepatitis to acquired immune deficiency syndrome. Certainly, the guru of "bloodless" medicine—basically surgery performed without any transfusions—hasn't gone unnoticed. He has been the subject of a flattering profile on ABC's "20/20" in December 1986, and scores of glowing newspaper articles. His Institute of Bloodless Medicine and Surgery here has attracted thousands of patients, and hundreds of students, whom it has trained. The institute even publishes its own medical journal.

But if Dr. Lapin is famous in some circles, he is infamous in others. Critics call him a hype artist who promotes practices that are already routine. One of his certifications for specialized surgery comes from an academy run out of a Las Vegas pain clinic. A California state agency tried once to revoke his license, but withdrew its charges, citing insufficient evidence. The agency is currently investigating him again, after receiving allegations that he may have performed operations while under the influence of narcotics.

In recent days, however, Dr. Lapin's personal life has come under closer scrutiny than his professional life. His third ex-wife, a 32-year-old former Israeli beauty queen named Orly Hadida, is on trial in Santa Ana, Calif., for the felony of stealing their two young children. At her trial, she accused her former husband of abusing drugs and alcohol and of molesting their four-year-old daughter. Alma Mujica, a nanny formerly employed by Dr. Lapin, testified that he raped her several times and molested the little girl. Dr. Lapin denies all the charges…

But he vows to press on. "We are killing too many people by unnecessary blood transfusions," Dr. Lapin says. "It is immoral, and it has got to be changed."

There are about 450 self-proclaimed bloodless surgeons world-wide, mostly foreign doctors affiliated with Dr. Lapin's institute. But hundreds of other doctors will treat patients without blood transfusions, says a spokesman for the Jehovah's Witnesses world headquarters. Blood demand has risen 20% in the last decade, because of medical advances such as organ transplants and certain cardiac procedures. Last year, 12 million units of blood were transfused in the U.S. But mainly because of the AIDS scare, surgeons are increasingly cautious about blood transfusions...

[Copyright Dow Jones & Co. Inc. This article is made available by Dow Jones Co. for the personal and non-commercial use of callers to their website...]

BLUNDEN, S.O.

One of the original directors of Zion's Watch Tower Tract Society.

The following Notice was published in w1885 January:

A charter of incorporation for Zion's Watch Tower Tract Society was granted December 13th, 1884. The Incorporators are the Directors, named below, from among whom the officers indicated have just been elected for the year 1885:

DIRECTORS:
C. T. RUSSELL, Pres.,
M. F. RUSSELL, Sec. and Treas.,
W. C. McMILLAN,
W. I. MANN, Vice Pres.,
J. B. ADAMSON,

J. F. SMITH.

The original Corporate Charter of ZWTS filed in November 1884 and approved in December includes a seventh Director named Simon O. Blunden of NYC, New York. He was the second to last original director serving, and resigned in January 1908 during the New Covenant schism.

He is mentioned again in wr1917 11/1.

BODY
Philippians 3:20-21 reads: "Christ ... shall change our vile body ... into his glorious body."

Russell believed that the body here was not the human body but the church. (w1893 3/1 102)

JWs later reinterpreted "our vile body" as the individual members of the 144,000 who are "changed" into ghost-like spirits at death.

JWs used to believe that Jesus' words "This means my body", at the Last Supper, meant "his spiritual body, the Christian congregation" but revised this in 1956. (w1954 3/15 174; w1956 1/15 49)

BODY OF ELDERS
All the elders of a local congregation considered as a group, especially when they meet together in formal session.

BOLIVIA
Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bolivia and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	1,168	4,222		
1975	2,400	2,347		
1980	2,527	1,979	9,861	507
1985	4,207	1,545	17,169	379
1990	7,452	913	29,743	229
1995	11,543	632	50,600	144
2000	17,223	484	58,000	144
2005	17,843	496	60,600	146
2010	20,778	502	66,400	157
2015	25,174	426	77,100	139
2018	27,776	405	86,800	130
	Ave.			
2019	28,255	407	94,100	122
2020	28,968	403	84,800	138
2021	29,351	403	102,489	115
2022	29,147	411	83,200	144
2023	29,034	419	79,900	152
2024	29,693	423	79,900	157
2025	30,492	413	75,900	166

BONAIRE
Publishers and Memorial attendance on Bonaire (a Caribbean island north of Venezuela) and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	17	476		
1975	37	230		
1980	36	248	140	64
1985	47	212	157	63
1990	71	153	200	54
1995	71	189	192	70
2000	65	226	193	76
2005	79	174	248	55
2010	96	139	324	41
2015	122	155	357	53
2018	160	162	351	74
	Ave.			
2019	121	165	370	54
2020	120	175	311	68
2021	116	181	357	59
2022	120	183	352	63
2023	132	182	392	61
2024	142	176	423	59
2025	153	176	461	59

BONDAGE
JWs believe that people of all other religions are in "bondage to Babylon the Great". (e.g. g1985 1/22 21)

BOOK (EZEKIEL 2:9)
The scroll or book mentioned in Ezekiel 2:9 was supposedly prophetic of Russell's first volume of *Studies in the Scriptures* which contained: "…deep truths, discernible only to those who have the Holy Spirit." (The Finished Mystery 1917, 379-380)

Rutherford changed this interpretation of the scroll in 1930. (Vindication I 1931, 19-31, 35)

BOOK BAG
The bag or briefcase JWs carry door-to-door which contains their magazines, tracts, leaflets, territory map, return-visit list, and other items.

BOOK OFFER
The book recommended by headquarters which JWs offer at the doors in a given month.

BOOK SELLING SCHEME

The WTS in Rutherford's time was commonly considered to be running a "book-selling" scheme for profit:

> The clergy and their allies … try to dampen the zeal of the remnant by declaring that almost all of Jehovah's witnesses are dupes and perverts engaged in a book-selling scheme at the instance of selfish men. (w1932 8/1 228)

Although the book-selling-scheme accusation was correct, it was a secondary motive, a means to an end. Rutherford's main goal was to establish world government by a mass movement of people into the "Theocracy" of "God's Organization" and in the process eradicate other religions and governments.

(See: *GOAL*)

BOOK STUDY / BOOK STUDY MEETING / CONGREGATION BOOK STUDY

A one-hour midweek, evening meeting (usually Tuesday) in which the congregation met in groups of about ten in private homes (or in different rooms of the Kingdom Hall) to study a WTS book assigned by Brooklyn headquarters.

From January 1, 2009 the Book Study was renamed "Congregation Bible Study", reduced to 25 minutes, and added to the midweek "Theocratic Ministry School" and "Service Meeting".

This reduction of three weekly attendance sessions to two was explained as a "blessing" which saved on gas (petrol) and reduced the stress levels of busy JWs.

Critics noted that gas prices vary from country to country and have been higher in the past (e.g. 1974 oil crisis) without the number of meetings being reduced. Speculations regarding the change include insurance liability in private homes and too many staying away from "dull, uninspired, repetitive" meetings. One observer wrote:

> They're losing active members fast and the elimination of one meeting night a week is a limp-wristed attempt to stop the hemorrhaging.

BOOK STUDY GROUP

The people, numbering up to about 25, who attended the JWs midweek Book Study meeting held in private homes (until discontinued in 2009).

Since 2009 the Book Study is called a "Bible Study" and held at the Kingdom Hall as a third meeting along with the Ministry School and Service Meeting. (See: *MEETINGS*)

BOOKLETS of the WBTS

Non-periodicals of up to 96 pages are usually considered booklets or brochures. Publications with more than 96 pages are usually books. A list of booklets published or approved by the WTS follows:

- 1891 The Wonderful Story
- 1892 The Divine Plan of the Ages for Human Salvation
- 1894 Harvest Siftings
- 1896 Outlines of the Divine Plan of the Ages
- 1896 What the Scriptures say about Hell
- 1898 The Bible Versus Evolution
- 1899 Berean Bible Studies on the Tabernacle Shadows
- 1902 The Parousia of Our Lord
- 1905 Features of the Plan of God
- 1905 What Do the Scriptures Say About Survival After Death?
- 1907 Instructor's Guide and Berean Index
- 1907 The Sin Offering and the Covenants
- 1908 Questions Answering Questions
- 1909 The Sin Offering and the Covenants
- 1910 Die Stemme (Yiddish)
- 1910 Jewish Hopes — Jerusalem Restoration Prospects
- 1912 The Bible vs The Evolution Theory
- 1912 The Great Pyramid and the Bible
- 1912 The Pyramid Portrayal of Creation
- 1913 Answers to Dr. Gray
- 1915 A Great Battle in the Ecclesiastical Heavens
- 1915 Poems of Dawn
- 1915 Rutherford-Troy Debate
- 1915 What Say the Scriptures About Hell?
- 1916 An Index to the Towers
- 1916 The Rich Young Man Whom Jesus Loved
- 1916 Three Discourses on the Divine Plan
- 1917 Harvest Siftings I & II
- 1919 The Preservation of Identity in the Resurrection
- 1920 Can the Living Talk With The Dead?
- 1920 The Bible on our Lord's Return
- 1920 The Golden Age ABC
- 1921 The Bible On Hell
- 1922 The Bible on our Lord's Return
- 1923 World Distress Why?
- 1924 A Desirable Government
- 1924 Hell—What is It…?
- 1925 Comfort for the People
- 1925 Our Lord's Return
- 1926 Standard for the People
- 1927 Deliverance Questions
- 1927 Freedom for the Peoples
- 1927 Prospectus
- 1927 Where are the Dead?

- 1928 Prosperity Sure
- 1928 The Last Days
- 1928 The People's Friend
- 1929 Judgment
- 1929 Oppression
- 1929 Our Lord's Return
- 1930? Bethel Home Rules and Regulations
- 1930 Crimes and Calamities
- 1930 Hell—What Is It…? (Revised)
- 1930 Prohibition and the League of Nations
- 1930 War or Peace—Which?
- 1931 Heaven and Purgatory
- 1931 The Kingdom The Hope of The World
- 1932 Causes of Death
- 1932 Good News
- 1932 Health and Life
- 1932 Hereafter
- 1932 Home and Happiness
- 1932 Keys of Heaven
- 1932 Liberty
- 1932 The Final War
- 1932 What is Truth?
- 1932 What You Need
- 1932 Where are the Dead?
- 1932 Who is God?
- 1933 Dividing the People
- 1933 Escape to the Kingdom
- 1933 Intolerance
- 1933 Crisis
- 1934 Angels
- 1934 Beyond the Grave
- 1934 Favored People
- 1934 His Vengeance
- 1934 His Works
- 1934 Righteous Ruler
- 1934 Supremacy
- 1934 Truth—Shall It Be Suppressed?
- 1934 Why Pray for Prosperity?
- 1934 World Recovery
- 1935 Government Hiding the Truth. Why?
- 1935 Loyalty
- 1935 Who Shall Rule the World?
- 1935 Universal War Near
- 1935 Who Shall Rule the World?
- 1936 Choosing Riches or Ruin?
- 1936 Protection…
- 1937 Armageddon…
- 1937 Model Study 1
- 1937 Safety
- 1937 Uncovered
- 1938 Cure
- 1938 Face the Facts
- 1938 Freedom or Romanism
- 1938 Warning
- 1938 Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society
- 1939 Advice for Kingdom Publishers
- 1939 Fascism or Freedom
- 1939 Government and Peace
- 1939 Liberty to Preach
- 1939 Model Study 2
- 1939 Neutrality
- 1940 Conspiracy Against Democracy
- 1940 End of Nazism
- 1940 Judge Rutherford Uncovers Fifth Column
- 1940 Model Study 3
- 1940 Refugees
- 1940 Satisfied
- 1941 Comfort All That Mourn
- 1941 End of Axis Powers
- 1941 God and the State
- 1941 Jehovah's Servants Defended
- 1941 Model Study 3
- 1941 Theocracy
- 1942 Children Study Questions
- 1942 Hope for the Dead…
- 1942 Jehovah's Witnesses Who Are They?
- 1942 Organization Instructions
- 1942 Peace—Can It Last?
- 1942 The New World Study Questions
- 1943 Course in Theocratic Ministry
- 1943 Fighting for Liberty on the Home Front
- 1943 Freedom in the New World
- 1943 Freedom of Worship
- 1943 Introducing the Kingdom Message
- 1943 The Truth Shall Make You Free Study Questions
- 1944 One World One Government
- 1944 Religion Reaps the Whirlwind
- 1944 Testimony Booklet
- 1944 The Coming World Regeneration
- 1944 The Kingdom is at Hand Study Questions
- 1944 The Kingdom of God is Nigh
- 1945 Organization for Kingdom Publishers
- 1945 The Commander to the Peoples
- 1945 The Meek Inherit the Earth
- 1946 Be Glad You Nations
- 1946 The Prince of Peace
- 1947 Catalogue WBTS
- 1947 The Joy of All the People
- 1948 The Permanent Governor of All Nations
- 1948 The Watchtower Story
- 1949 Counsel On Theocratic Organization for Jehovah's Witnesses
- 1949 The Kingdom Hope of All Mankind
- 1950 Defending and Legally Establishing the Good News
- 1950 Evolution Versus the New World
- 1950 Can You Live Forever in Happiness on Earth?
- 1951 Will Religion Meet the World Crisis?
- 1952 Dwelling Together in Unity
- 1952 God's Way is Love
- 1953 After Armageddon—God's New World
- 1953 Basis for Belief in a New World
- 1953 Jehovah's Witnesses of Modern Times
- 1953 Preach the Word
- 1954 Counsel to Watchtower Missionaries
- 1954 This Good News of the Kingdom

- 1954 Unassigned Territory in the United States
- 1955 Christendom or Christianity Which One is the Light of the World?
- 1955 Preaching Together in Unity
- 1955 What Do the Scriptures Say About "Survival After Death"?
- 1955 World Conquest Soon By God's Kingdom
- 1955 You May Survive Armageddon into God's New World
- 1956 Manuel of Theocratic News Service Information
- 1956? Preach the Word
- 1957 Healing of the Nations Has Drawn Near
- 1958 God's Kingdom Rules—Is the World's End Near?
- 1959 Look! I Am Making All Things New
- 1959 When God Speaks Peace to All Nations
- 1960 Preaching and Teaching in Peace and Unity
- 1960 Security During "War of the Great Day of God the Almighty"
- 1961 Bible Topics for Discussion
- 1961 Blood, Medicine and the Law of God
- 1961 Sermon Outlines
- 1961 When All Nations Unite Under God's Kingdom
- 1962 Take Courage God's Kingdom is at Hand
- 1962 The Word - Who Is He According to John?
- 1963 Living In Hope of a Righteous New World
- 1963 When God is King Over All the Earth
- 1964 Peace Among Men of Good Will or Armageddon - Which?
- 1964 Questions on the Book "Babylon the Great Has Fallen!"
- 1965 This Good News of the Kingdom
- 1965 World Government on the Shoulders of the Prince of Peace
- 1966 What has God's Kingdom been doing since 1914?
- 1967 Learn to Read and Write
- 1967 Rescuing a Great Crowd of Mankind out of Armageddon
- 1968 Man's Rule About To Give Way To God's Rule
- 1969 Questions on the Book "Then is Finished The Mystery of God"
- 1969 Study Questions for the Book "Is The Bible Really The Word of God?"
- 1969 The Approaching Peace of a Thousand Years
- 1970 Look I Am Making All things New
- 1970 Saving the Human Race in the Kingdom Way
- 1971 Convention Organization
- 1971 When All Nations Collide Head On With God
- 1972 Divine Rulership The Only Hope for All Mankind
- 1973 Divine Victory — Its Meaning for Distressed humanity
- 1974 Human Plans Failing as God's Purpose Succeeds
- 1975 A Secure Future How You Can Find It
- 1975 Is There A God Who cares?
- 1975 One World One Government Under God's Sovereignty
- 1975 There Is Much More to Life
- 1977 Jehovah's Witnesses and the Question of Blood
- 1978 Unseen Spirits—Do They help Us? Or Do They Harm Us?
- 1980 The path of Divine Truth Leading to Liberation
- 1981 Pay Attention to Yourselves and to All the Flock III
- 1982 Dwelling Together in Unity (Revised)
- 1983 From Kurukshetra to Armageddon
- 1983 Good News for All nations
- 1983 In Search of a Father
- 1983 The Time For True Submission to God
- 1986 Victory Over Death – Is It Possible for You?
- 1986 Worldwide Security Under the "Prince of Peace"

Booklet-size (i.e. 48-96 pages) editions of *The Watchtower Publications Index* which listed topics published in the previous year's publications of the WTS came out in 1961 to 1964, 1966-1969, 1971-1974, 1976-1979, 1981-1984.

(See also: *BROCHURES*)

BOOKLETS — PRODUCTION

Production & placements of Booklets in millions:

	Produced	Placed
1939	25.92	
1940		
1941	29.10	
1942	16.56	
1943	25.19	
1949	17.00	
1951	13.60	
1957	13.42	
1958	14.13	12.64
1959	19.44	11.47
1960	14.73	12.37
1961	13.08	10.76
1962	15.87	11.66
1963	26.06	14.81
1964		13.18
1965		12.33
1967	14.65	11.74
1968	19.57	12.97
1969	13.27	11.11

1970	13.97	10.21
1971	13.46	10.59
1972	13.58	9.75
1973	10.53	9.97
1974	18.24	12.41
1975	22.19	12.16
1976		22.20
1978		15.11
1980		16.47

(See also: *AWAKE!; BOOKS; BROCHURES; LEAFLETS; MISCELLANEOUS PRINTING; PAMPHLETS; WATCHTOWER; TRACTS*)

BOOKS ABOUT JWs

See: *JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES, BOOKS ABOUT*

BOOKS of the WTS including C.T. Russell

Since 1922 most WTS books have been produced on WTS presses. Books are distinguished from booklets in having more than 96 pages. A list of books authored by C.T. Russell, the WTS, and WTS-approved writers follows. The list excludes hymnbooks and the *New World Translation*:

- 1877 Three Worlds
- 1881 Food for Thinking Christians
- 1881 The Tabernacle and Its Teachings
- 1886 The Divine Plan of the ages
- 1889 The Time is at Hand
- 1891 Tabernacle Shadows of Better Sacrifices [Old Theological Quarterly Tract No. 11, 104 pages]
- 1891 Thy Kingdom come
- 1891 The Great Pyramid
- 1893 Thy Word Is Truth
- 1894 A Conspiracy Exposed
- 1896 What Say the Scriptures About Hell? [Old Theological Quarterly Tract No. 32, 88 pages]
- 1897 The Battle of Armageddon
- 1897 What Say the Scriptures About Spiritualism? [Old Theological Quarterly Tract No. 39, 128 pages]
- 1899 At-One-Ment Between God and Man
- 1899 Tabernacle Shadows (Revised)
- 1900 What Say the Scriptures About Our Lord's Return? (Old Theological Quarterly Tract No. 48, 80 pages]
- 1902 Poems of Dawn
- 1904 The New Creation
- 1905 Daily Heavenly Manna
- 1907 Daily Heavenly Manna and Birthday Record
- 1907 My Friends, Their Birthdays and Autographs
- 1908 Tabernacle Shadows (Revised)
- 1909 Bible Students Manual
- 1911 Tabernacle Shadows (Revised)
- 1912 Poems of Dawn (Revised)
- 1915 Photo Drama of Creation
- 1916 Tabernacle Shadows (Revised)
- 1917 Berean Bible Helps
- 1917 Pastor Russell's Sermons
- 1917 What Pastor Russell Said
- 1917 What Pastor Russell Wrote
- 1917 The Finished Mystery
- 1918 Revelation
- 1919 What Pastor Russell Taught
- 1920 Can The Living Talk With the Dead?
- 1920 Millions Now Living Will Never Die
- 1921 The Harp of God
- 1924 The Way to Paradise
- 1925 Comfort for the Jews
- 1926 Deliverance
- 1927 Creation
- 1927 Restoration
- 1928 Government
- 1928 Reconciliation
- 1929 Life
- 1929 Prophecy
- 1930 Light I & II
- 1931 Vindication I
- 1932 Vindication II & III
- 1932 Preservation
- 1933 Preparation
- 1934 Jehovah
- 1936 Riches
- 1937 Enemies
- 1937 Reconciliation (Revised)
- 1938 Kreuzzug gegen das Christentum
- 1939 Salvation
- 1940 Religion
- 1941 Children
- 1942 The New World
- 1942 Convention Report
- 1943 Freedom of Worship
- 1943? The New World Concordance to the Bible
- 1943 The Truth Shall Make you Free
- 1944 The Kingdom Is At Hand1945 Theocratic Aid to Kingdom Publishers
- 1946 Equipped for Every Good Work
- 1946 Let God be True
- 1950 This Means Everlasting Life
- 1951 What Has Religion Done for Mankind?
- 1952 Let God be True (Revised)
- 1953 Make Sure of All things
- 1953 New Heavens and a New Earth
- 1955 Qualified To Be Ministers
- 1955 You May Survive Armageddon into God's New World
- 1957 Make Sure of All things (Revised)
- 1958 From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained
- 1958 Your Will Be Done On Earth
- 1959 Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose
- 1961 Let Your Name Be Sanctified

- 1961 Watch Tower Publications Index 1930-1960
- 1963 All Scripture is Inspired of God and Beneficial
- 1963 Babylon the Great Has Fallen
- 1965 Make Sure of All Things
- 1965 Things in Which It is Impossible for God to Lie
- 1966 Life Everlasting in Freedom of the Sons of God
- 1966 Watch Tower Publications index 1960-1965
- 1967 Did Man Get Here by Evolution or by Creation?
- 1967 Qualified to be Ministers (Revised)
- 1967 Your Word is a lamp to My Foot
- 1968 The Truth that leads to Eternal Life
- 1969 Aid to Bible Understanding A-E
- 1969 Is the Bible Really the Word of God?
- 1969 The Kingdom Interlinear
- 1969 Then is Finished The Mystery of God
- 1971 Aid to Bible Understanding (complete)
- 1971 Theocratic Ministry School Guidebook
- 1971 The nations shall know that I am Jehovah"
- 1971 Watch Tower Publications Index 1965-1970
- 1972 Organization for Kingdom Preaching and Disciple-Making
- 1972 Paradise Restored to Mankind by Theocracy
- 1973 Comprehensive Concordance
- 1973 God's Kingdom of a Thousand Years Has Approached
- 1973 True Peace and Security From What Source?
- 1974 God's Eternal Purpose Now Triumphing for Man's Good
- 1974 Is This Life All There Is?
- 1975 Man's Salvation out of World Distress At hand!
- 1976 Good News to Make You Happy
- 1976 Holy Spirit - The Force Behind the Coming New Order
- 1976 Watch Tower Publications Index 1970-1975
- 1976 Your Youth—Getting the Best Out of It
- 1977 Life Does Have a Purpose
- 1977 Our Incoming World Government - God's Kingdom
- 1977 Pay Attention to Yourselves and to All the Flock *
- 1978 Making Your Family Life Happy
- 1978 My Book of Bible Stories
- 1979 Choosing the Best Way of Life
- 1979 Commentary on the Letter of James
- 1980 Happiness - How to Find It
- 1981 Let Your Kingdom Come
- 1981 The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life (Revised)
- 1981 Watch Tower Publications Index 1975-1980
- 1982 You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth
- 1983 All Scripture Is Inspired of God and Beneficial (Revised)
- 1983 Organized to Accomplish Your Ministry
- 1983 United in Worship of the Only True God
- 1984 New World Translation (Revised with references)
- 1984 Survival into a New Earth
- 1985 Life - How Did It Get here? By Evolution Or Creation?
- 1985 Reasoning from the Scriptures
- 1986 True Peace and Security
- 1986 Watch Tower Publications Index 1930-1985
- 1986 Worldwide Security
- 1988 Insight on the Scriptures I & II
- 1988 Revelation—Its Grand Climax Near At Hand!
- 1989 Organized to Accomplish Our Ministry
- 1989 Questions Young People—Ask Answers That Work
- 1989 Reasoning from the Scriptures (Revised)
- 1989 The Bible — God's Word or Man's?
- 1989 Shining as Illuminators in the World (Revised) *
- 1989 You Can Live Forever In Paradise on Earth (Revised)
- 1990 All Scripture is Inspired of God and Beneficial (Revised)
- 1990 Mankind's Search for God
- 1991 Pay Attention to Yourselves and to All the Flock
- 1991 The Greatest Man Who Ever Lived
- 1992 Watch Tower Publications Index 1985-1990
- 1992 Theocratic Ministry School Guidebook
- 1993 Jehovah's Witnesses Proclaimers of God's Kingdom
- 1995 Knowledge That Leads to Everlasting Life
- 1996 The Secret of Family Happiness
- 1996 Watchtower Publications Index 1991-1995
- 1996 The Secret of Family Happiness
- 1998 Is There a Creator Who Cares About You?
- 1999 Pay Attention to Daniel's Prophecy!
- 2000 Isaiah's Prophecy — Light for All Mankind Volume I
- 2001 Isaiah's Prophecy — Light for All Mankind Volume II
- 2002 Benefit From Theocratic Ministry School Education
- 2002 Draw Close to Jehovah
- 2002 Worship the Only True God
- 2003 Learn From the Great Teacher
- 2004 My Book of Bible Stories

- 2005 What Does the Bible *Really* Teach?
- 2006 Live With Jehovah's Day in Mind
- 2006 Live With Jehovah's Day In Mind
- 2007 "Come Be My Follower"
- 2008 "Keep Yourselves in God's Love"
- 2008 Questions Young People Ask—Answers That Work Volume 2
- 2010 Jeremiah
- 2011 Questions Young People Ask—Answers That Work Volume 1
- 2013 Imitate Their Faith
- 2014 God's Kingdom Rules
- 2014 Keep Yourselves in God's Love
- 2014 Research Guide for Jehovah's Witnesses
- 2014 What Does the Bible Really Teach?
- 2015 Jesus The Way, The Truth, The Life
- 2015 What Can the Bible Teach Us?
- 2017 Lessons you can learn from the Bible
- 2017 Remain in God's Love
- 2018 Pure Worship of Jehovah
- 2019 Organized to Do Jehovah's Will
- 2020 Bible Study Video Reference Guide
- 2021 Enjoy Life Forever
- 2022 Bearing Thorough Witness
- 2022 "Come Be My Follower"
- 2022 Draw Close to Jehovah
-

The Russellites/JWs/WTS have also used and/or published about 25 songbooks (listed in the entry *SONGBOOKS*), distributed or printed about 40 Bible-versions, published about 90 yearbooks 1926-2017, produced bound volumes of *The Watchtower* and *Awake!*, and published dozens of convention reports (listed under *CONVENTION REPORTS*).

In 1986 the daily text section of the *Yearbook* was replaced with a book published annually titled *Examining the Scriptures Daily*.

BOOKS — PRINTING STATISTICS

WTS books have among the highest printings of any books in the world.

Compare the following lists of the numbers printed of WTS books and non-WTS/Non-fiction books:

New World Translation **238,000,000**
The Truth that Leads to Eternal Life (1969/1981) **107,000,000**
You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth (1982/1989) **80,900,000**
Knowledge That Leads to Everlasting Life (1995) **45,500,000**
True Peace and Security (1986) **37,000,000**
Let God Be True (1946/1952) **19,247,000**
Is the Bible Really the Word of God (1969) **15,000,000**
From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained (1958) **12,090,000**
Life—How Did It Get Here? (1985) **11,000,000**
The Greatest Man Who Ever Lived (1991) **10,000,000**
Things In Which It Is Impossible For God To Lie (1965) **10,000,000**
Did Man Get Here By Evolution Or By Creation (1969) **7,000,000**
Worldwide Security Under the Prince of Peace (1986) **6,000,000**
Divine Plan of the Ages (1892) **6,000,000**
The Harp of God (1921) **5,819,000**

Non-WTS/Non-fiction Books

The Bible (All versions) (1815-2020) **5,000,000,000**
The Holy Quran **3,000,000,000**
Quotations of Mao Zedong **800,000,000**
NIV Bible (1978-2013) **450,000,000**
Good News Bible (1966) **244,000,000**
Book of Mormon (1830) **190,000,000**
The Highway Code (1931-1994) **113,300,000**
Guinness Book of Records (1955) **100,000,000**
American Spelling Book (1783) **100,000,000**
Automobile Association Handbook (1908-1991) **97,700,000**
Guinness Book of Records (1955) **100,000,000**
The McGuffey Reader (1879) **60,000,000**
A Message to Garcia (1899) **50,000,000**
Deutsche Bundespost (1993 initial print) **42,300,000**
Cosmos (1980) **40,000,000**
World Almanac (1868) **40,000,000**
The Diary of Anne Frank (1947) **35,000,000**
Your Erroneous Zones (1976) **35,000,000**
How to Win Friends... (1936) **30,000,000**
In His Steps (1896) **30,000,000**
Valley of the Dolls (1966) **30,000,000**
Alcoholic Anonymous Big Book (1939) **30,000,000**
A Brief History of Time (1986) **25,000,000**
The Commonsense Book of Baby and Child Care (1946) **25,000,000**
The Bermuda Triangle (1974) **20,000,000**
Kon-Tiki... (1950) **20,000,000**
What to Expect When You're Expecting (1984) **20,000,000**
Autobiography of a Yogi (1946) **20,000,000**
The Naked Ape (1968) **20,000,000**
The Power of Positive Thinking (1952) **20,000,000**
The Late Great Planet Earth (1970) **18,000,000**
Roots (1976) **12,500,000**
American Cross First Aid Book **16,000,000**

Note the statistics are provisional and some may need updating

BOOKS PLACED

The following table enumerates the sales of Russell's books from 1909 to 1917:

1909	710,000	1914	990,000
1910	710,000	1915	660,000
1911	540,000	1916	450,000
1912	810,000	1917	830,000
1913	870,000		

WTS statistics from the 1920s onwards distinguish book/booklet production from placements. Placements refer to publications sold or given to the public or to one's children.

BOOKS & BOOKLETS PRODUCTION
Books produced and books+booklets produced (in millions):

	Books	Books + Booklets
1936		24.46
1939	1.89	27.81
1940		25.83
1941	2.47	31.57
1942	3.06	19.62
1943	2.70	27.89
1949	4.00	21
1950		12.65
1951	5.00	18.56
1955		46.79
1957	3.13	16.55
1958	4.38	18.51
1959	5.37	24.81
1960	7.00	22.73
1961	5.851	18.94
1962	6.44	22.35
1963	6.72	32.78
1965	5.68	
1966	7.6	
1967	8.80	13.454
1968	13.77	33.34
1969	27.94	41.20
1970	29.14	43.10
1971	28.10	41.51
1972	33.97	47.55
1973	33.354	43.89
1974	51.66	69.90
1975	63.31	85.49
1976		102.64
1978		70.58
1983		53.52
1984		59.19

Published statistics of books and booklets produced or placed are intended to "encourage" the door-to-door publishers. However, when prophecy fails the figures can decline drastically. We see this in 1915 and 1976/1977. When this happens the statistics are not always published. Sometimes they are published years later when the numbers have recovered and the low numbers caused by prophecy-failure make a useful low baseline against which to measure "Jehovah's blessing" of renewed increase. (See also: *PUBLICATIONS*)

In Rutherford's time the placement of books and booklets was around 15 million annually, reaching a cumulative total of 110 million in 1931 and 279 million in 1938 with a further 30.46 million placed in 1939.

BOOTH, JOHN
Governing Body member appointed in November 1974.

While still in high school Booth taught Sunday school for the Dutch Reformed Church in New York. In November 1921 he obtained *The Divine Plan of the Ages* and *What Say the Scriptures About Hell* (C.T. Russell) and attended Russellite meetings.

In 1923 Booth worked on construction of the WBTS radio station, WBBR, on Staten Island, colporteured full time in 1928-1935 mainly in rural areas, and was appointed a Regional Service Director (equivalent to a circuit overseer) in 1936.

Booth became a Zone Servant (similar to circuit overseer) in 1938 and:
- Visited companies (congregations);
- Organized zone conventions;
- Arranged "information marches" in which JWs carried placards or sandwich signs reading "Religion Is a Snare and a Racket";
- Attended court actions against JWs as defendant, or witness.

Booth was assigned to work at the WTS Kingdom Farm near Ithaca, New York, 1942-1969, and Watchtower Farms (a property obtained in 1963) in January 1970.

BOOTH, JOSEPH (1851-1932)
A British-born New Zealander who became an independent missionary and introduced Russellism to Africa.

Booth went to Nyasaland in 1892 and started "Industrial Missions". He made many enemies among the Europeans because he paid Africans six times the wages they normally received. Booth criticised the "Scramble for Africa" and in 1899 circulated a petition for African independence. Such activities lost him control of his Industrial Missions and made him a fugitive.

Unable to get any denomination to sponsor him Booth tried C.T. Russell in 1906. Based in Cape Town Booth introduced Russellism to Central Africa by mail and by sending a

travelling-convert, Elliot Kamwana. Converts of Booth such as Domingo and Chilembwe soon ran mission stations where religious beliefs consisted of watered-down Russellism particularly the apocalyptic elements such as Armageddon in 1915. About 10,000 Africans were baptized. In 1915 came a brief native uprising led by Chilembwe and suppressed by British troops.

Booth was then expelled from Africa but returned in 1925.

WTS publications referred to Russellism in Africa positively as late as 1917 several years after it had splintered and dispersed. When JWs publishers arrived in Africa in the 1920s and 1930s they got little cooperation from the indigenous Watch Tower Movement.

BORN AGAIN

The act of being chosen by God to be of the 144,000 after cleansing from false religion, consecration, baptism, and reception of the holy spirit. (The Kingdom of God is At Hand 1944, 265-270)

Born again is equivalent to being "be-gotten of God". (w1944 7 /1 197-203) Those born again will, if they remain loyal to the JWs leaders, go to heaven as one of the 144,000. (w1946 6/1 172)

Most of the "saved" are not born again and will live forever on Earth: "No, for not all who gain God's approval are associated with Jesus Christ in rulership. The majority will be earthly subjects of God's kingdom by Christ." (g1976 6/22 28)

JWs therefore believe that only 144,000 are "born again" and will go to heaven. In Russell's time all the born-again were Russellites. Since 1935 all the born-again belong to the JWs "remnant" of the 144,000 — all other Christians are not "born again". (w1982 2/1 22-23)

To be born again requires six steps — "accurate knowledge", "exercise faith", "repentance", "conversion", "make a dedication to Jehovah God", "undergo baptism". (w1982 2/1 25-26)

BOSNIA and HERZEGOVINA

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bosnia and Herzegovina and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1995	501	9,014	1,559	2,897
2000	1,052	3,996	2,333	1,802
2005	1,138	3,368	2,284	1,678
2010	1,212	3,806	2,267	2,035
2015	1,189	3,189	1,972	1,923
2018	1,108	3,165	1,690	2,075
	Ave.			
2019	1,045	3,159	1,794	1,840
2020	1,025	3,201	1,677	1,956
2021	1,026	3,180	1,808	1,805
2022	989	3,285	1,574	2,064
2023	947	3,418	1,507	2,148
2024	934	3,420	1,400	2,281
2025	918	3,420	1,335	2,352

BOTSWANA

Peak publishers and Memorial attendance in Botswana and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	202	3,025		
1975	284	2,220		
1980	296	2,578	964	792
1985	423	2,214	1,185	790
1990	591	2,201	1,948	668
1995	916	1,662	2,445	623
2000	1,169	1,413	3,252	508
2005	1,486	1,162	3,803	454
2010	1,924	936	5,003	360
2015	2,153	1,051	6,323	358
2018	2,316	1,011	6,225	376
	Ave.			
2019	2,223	1,052	6,707	349
2020	2,171	1,094	4,854	489
2021	2,265	1,058	6,952	345
2022	2,286	1,026	5,913	397
2023	2,308	1,016	6,115	384
2024	2,355	1,002	6,321	373
2025	2,457	961	6,329	373

BOUND VOLUME

The Watchtower and *Awake!* magazines for one year bound into a hard-cover volume.

BOWEN, WILLIAM (1957-)

Former JW elder in Calvert City, Kentucky, who founded Silent Lambs in 2001 to expose child sexual abuse among JWs and provide assistance to victims.

The group claimed that 6000 JWs abuse victims contacted them.

Bowen served as a JW elder for 15 years, and worked in the printing factory at the JWs headquarters from 1977 until 1979.

He resigned his elder position in December 2000 over disagreement with JWs policies for reporting child sex abuse.

In 2002 Silent Lambs assisted in bringing civil lawsuits against the WTS over the mishandling of child abuse and organized a demonstration outside their headquarters in Brooklyn, New York. At about this time Bowen was disfellowshipped for "causing divisions".

Bowen claims that the WBTS maintains a list of twenty thousand JWs abusers which has not been released because it would hurt the public image of the Organization. The WBTS says the number is lower and its purpose is to prevent child molesters being appointed to positions of authority.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Silentlambs

BOYD, BONNIE (1907?-)

Internet sources make a case for Rutherford having had adulterous relationships with two women, Bonnie Boyd and Berta Peale, who were his dieticians and personal assistants after his wife, Mary, moved to Monrovia, California, in 1923.

Both women accompanied Rutherford on trips to Europe and around the USA, and stayed with him at the Beth Sarim mansion at San Diego, California.

Most of the information about Bonnie Boyd and her husband William Heath comes from the court transcript of *Watchtower Attorney Olin R. Moyle Sues Watchtower President Joseph F. Rutherford* and is as follows.

Bonny Boyd

Bonnie Boyd was born in Iowa (in 1906/1907) and at age 16 moved to Brooklyn Bethel with her mother in 1923 and worked as stenographer for W.E. Van Amburgh (who was probably second in charge after Rutherford).

From 1931 Bonnie served as Rutherford's personal secretary and stenographer, taking dictation for books, *Watchtower* articles and booklets.

Commencing in 1931 Bonnie and her mother lived with Rutherford on the seventh floor of Bethel. Bonnie lived there until Rutherford's death in 1942; and her mother until 1937 serving as housekeeper for the seventh floor. They also went with Rutherford to the Beth Sarim mansion in California every year, staying there with Rutherford and a caretaker couple from November to May. That was where Rutherford did most of his writing. Bonnie also went: "abroad with him … every year… two months sometimes six weeks…" This was for Rutherford's speaking tours at conventions in Europe when they would stay in the same hotels.

William P. Heath, Jr. (b.1904), former manager of a Bottling Plant in South Carolina, was invited to Bethel in 1937 to serve as Rutherford's personal secretary. He: "took letters, made arrangements for travel, drove him on business."

Heath had attended two universities and was wealthy as he was related to one of the founders of the Coca Cola Company. His mother had joined the Russellites in 1915 and he joined JWs in 1932.

In January 1938 Heath divorced his wife of eight years, and one week later married Bonnie Boyd who thus became Bonnie Heath.

William Heath was also made a director of the WBTS and would accompany Rutherford and Bonnie on the tours to Europe as well as to Beth-Sarim for the winter.

In 1938 William Heath negotiated the purchase of the Beth-Shan property (situated next to Beth Sarim), served on the WBTS Board of Directors, and was in charge of the ushers at the Madison Square Garden Convention (where he was arrested for hitting a "mobster" over the head with a cane).

Two typewritten pages authored by Bonny Boyd Heath listing JWs movies stars and entertainers were in circulation around1950.

Berta Peale

Berta L. Teel born, c.1900, in North Carolina joined the Russellites around 1918 and married Alfred Peale in 1922. In 1937 she left her husband and went to live at Brooklyn Bethel, serving as Rutherford's dietician and nurse. Her husband divorced her in 1939.

Berta Peale was a "pioneer" in the early 1930s when she first met Rutherford. Her family lived in Ohio at the time and she arrived at Bethel in 1937. She served as Rutherford's dietician and nurse, assisting Rutherford's male nurse (Matthew Howlett) and treated Rutherford in his hospital room located on the seventh floor.

Berta also went regularly to the seventh floor to socialize with Rutherford and/or Bonnie but did not live there.

Evidence

Thus Rutherford was regularly accompanied by a young Bonnie Boyd for seven years

before she married. Shortly after Bonnie married, Rutherford took Berta Peale as his "nurse" — not a qualified nurse, but acting as a nurse. Berta accompanied him on travels. And throughout this time Rutherford was separated from his wife.

Bonnie was one of the witnesses who had signed the deed to Beth Sarim. She was also allowed to marry and stay at Bethel despite a rule preventing marriage among Bethel staff unless both spouses had lived there at least five years — and her husband William Heath was a new arrival.

The evidence for Rutherford committing adultery is that he had ample opportunity, preferentially bent the rules, made Bonnie unusually prominent, gave rapid promotions, and doubled up on nurses (with Berta being merely a nurse-aid). Further evidence is hearsay such as the occupation of adjacent hotel rooms with connecting door, and that Berta when aged 70 allegedly confessed adultery with Rutherford to Nathan Knorr.

A speculation

An interesting speculation is whether Rutherford's doctrine of the "divine mandate" whereby JWs were supposed to wait until after Armageddon to marry was an attempt to discourage Bonnie's marriage to William Heath.

This doctrine was made explicit in 1938 and dictated to Bonnie in her role as secretary and stenographer before her marriage took place:

> Would it be Scripturally proper for them to now marry and to begin to rear children? No, is the answer, which is supported by the Scriptures. Referring to the prophetic picture: Noah's sons and their wives had no children before or during the flood, and none were born of them until after the flood dried up… (Face The Facts 1938, 46)

(*Rutherford Exposed: The Story of Berta and Bonnie* — www.aggelia.be/rutherford.html)

BOYFRIEND/GIRFRIEND RELATIONSHIPS

Girlfriend-boyfriend relationships are opposed by the Governing Body. JWs should not pair off in this way until engaged to be married. (g1985 6/8 13-15)

BRAILLE

WBTS books were first published in Braille in 1901 by F.B. Gould. The mailing list in 1915 was 600. (Convention Report 1915, 41)

In 2000 the WTS produced Braille publications in 11 languages. (Yearbook 2001, 17)

Since 1969 starting with *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life* the WTS has produced over 100 of its publications in Braille including books, booklets and songbooks.

BRAINWASHED

A common accusation against JWs.

The label is not strictly correct since real brainwashing usually includes imprisonment, physical abuse, deprivations, and forced attendance at propaganda sessions.

When critics call JWs "brainwashed", it refers to the difficulty of "getting through" to them, past the jargon and slogans, to make them think.

(See also: *CONTROL; CONVERSION; ROBOTS*)

BRANCH OFFICE CORRESPONDENCE

This refers to correspondence between WTS branch offices with individual JWs and the public.

Readers of WTS publications may want questions answered, points clarified, or seek personal advice, or just say "thanks" for fantastic material published. The correspondence can be divided into three general categories:

1. Doctrinal
2. Personal problems
3. Help with making ethical decisions.

Common questions include:

- Can I do karate exercises?
- How long should my dress be?
- Were the nails punched through Jesus' palms or through his wrists?
- Is it alright to do repairs on a church if my employer requires this?
- Is it all right to work for the YMCA?
- Is it alright for my surgeon to remove some of my blood and re-introduce it into my body during surgery if needed?
- Do I have to shave off my beard to be baptized?
- Can I put a ring through my belly button?
- Can my children play video games?

"Writing Correspondence" in New York in 2001 consisted of 17 persons as part of the Writing Department under the supervision of

the Governing Body. JWs are advised to consult the elders and the WTS publications to get questions answered and to write to the Society only if more information is needed. Nevertheless Writing Correspondence received about 800 letters per month and 250 telephone calls.

Received letters are scanned into a computer. If the person has written before, his letter is linked to all his previous letters. Answers will often include a reference to a WTS publication. The person who answered the earlier letters also tackles the latest letter. The reply is sent electronically to another JW for proofreading and then a secretary prepares a paper version.

Questions that are difficult — such as asking for a list of failed prophecies — will either be ignored or the sender advised to see the elders. A JW who sees the elders with such questions and rejects the "light gets brighter" answer could end up disfellowshipped

BRANCH ORGANIZATION PROCEDURE
A WBTS book of policies and rules for regulating the volunteer workers at branch offices. In 1980 the book had 1,177 regulations.

BRANCHES/BRANCH OFFICE
The WTS/JWs headquarters at the national level or over a number of countries. The branch complex includes offices, living quarters for personnel and often a printery, warehouse, farms and gardens.

Number of Branches

1921	18	1975	96
1931	38	1980	98
1940	27	1985	c.95
1945	38	1999	109
1950	62	2013	91
1955	78	2015	90
1960	85	2020	87
1965	90	2025	84
1970	93		

The "2020 Grand Totals" of the WTS statistical report on the official website stated:

> "Worldwide, a total of 20,994 ordained ministers staff the branch facilities. All are members of the Worldwide Order of Special Full-Time Servants of Jehovah's Witnesses."

BRAZIL

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Brazil and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1940	250			
1950	3,900		c.7,000	
1960	20,300		c.50,000	
1970	64,200	1,484	164,400	579
1975	103,173	1,044		
1980	113,737	1,091	316,268	392
1985	177,900	759	483,900	280
1990	293,466	512	791,000	190
1995	416,638	380	1,144,000	138
2000	536,000	309	1,329,000	125
2005	638,000	289	1,527,000	121
2010	733,000	262	1,682,000	114
2015	805,000	254	1,744,000	117
2018	869,500	240	1,827,000	114
	A ve.			
2019	876,000	240	1,922,000	109
2020	889,000	239	1,627,000	130
2021	906,000	236	2,185,000	98
2022	902,000	238	1,809,000	119
2023	899,000	226	1,820,000	112
2024	914,000	222	1,811,000	112
2025	930,800	229	1,794,000	119

The increase slowed after 1975 for a few years due to the failure of Armageddon to occur.

BREGNINGE, P.
A JW in Denmark who left the sect in 1959 and was formally expelled in 1964 after publishing critical articles. In 2013/2017 he authored *Judgment Day Must Wait: Jehovah's Witnesses - A Sect Between Idealism and Deceit*. This 600-page paperback tells of repeated prophetic years on which the Bible predictions of JWs failed every time and how each failure is reinterpreted to produce anticipation for the near future or the next date. The constantly impending Armageddon, always on the brink, is a psychological tool to control sect members with fear and anxiety. The dates are "the carrot dangled before them" which countless JWs who didn't wake up chased futilely until they died.

Bregninge also authored the Danish book *Jehovas Vidner under anklage* (*Jehovah's Witnesses Accused*) (1966)

BRIBE
Bribe offering and bribe acceptance is condemned in the Bible and by JWs — at least nominally. (w1986 10/1 30-31) Raymond Franz in *Crisis of Conscience* (1983) described how JWs in Mexico pay bribes to officials for a card – "Identity Cartilla for Military Service" – on

which it's recorded that they've completed their military service training. Franz explained:

> Put briefly, in Mexico men of draft age are required to undergo a specified period of military training during a period of one year. Upon registration the registrant receives a certificate or "cartilla" with places for noting down attendance at weekly military instruction classes. It is illegal and punishable for any official to fill in this attendance record if the registrant has not actually attended. But officials can be bribed to do so and many men in Mexico do this. (Chapter 6, p.119)

BRIDE CLASS

1. The 144,000 who will live in heaven and rule the world with Christ;
2. The anointed remnant i.e. the "bride" members who are still alive on Earth are also called "bride class".

BRIDE OF CHRIST

The "Bride of Christ" is the 144,000 who go to heaven in the resurrection. The Russellites, and Rutherfordites until 1934/1935, considered themselves to be the final end-time members of this group or "bride class".

The majority of new converts to JWs after 1934/1935 were not of the bride class but of the "great crowd" who expect eternal life in perfected physical bodies on Earth.

BRILLIANT FLASH OF BIBLE UNDERSTANDING

Phrase sometimes used to describe a new doctrine or new interpretation:

> This brilliant flash of Bible understanding became a historic marker in the advancement of Jehovah's work. (Revelation Its Grand Climax Near At hand! 1988, 177)

The reference here is to Revelation 12:1, 2 — about a pregnant woman giving birth. In 1925 Rutherford interpreted this as the birth of "God's Kingdom" in 1914. (w1925 3/1; Deliverance 1926, 258) Because this interpretation is still retained it is called a "brilliant flash of Bible understanding".

From 1917 to 1925 the pregnant woman was interpreted as the "early church" and her baby was not God's Kingdom but "the loathsome thing … the antichrist." (The Finished Mystery 1917, 183) The book *The Finished Mystery* which contained this earlier interpretation was "the final witness of the Church" (The Finished Mystery 1917, 256) and "a Scriptural message". (Revelation Its Grand Climax Near At Hand 1988, 209)

Despite being "final" and a "Scriptural message" about 1,300 statements in *The Finished Mystery* were later discarded.

[See: *FINISHED MYSTERY, THE*; *FLASHES OF LIGHT*]

BRILLIANT FLASH OF LIGHT

Phrase used to describe a new doctrine or new interpretation.

BRINK

Another word used in WTS publications to emphasize Armageddon's nearness and make JWs more zealous:

> At the brink of Armageddon… (w1983 11/1 front cover and p.3)

> Jehovah adds a third part to his promise: "I myself, Jehovah, shall *speed it up* in its own time." As **we stand at the brink of the "great tribulation,"** the time for this is NOW! (Mark 13:10, 18, 19) The rapid acceleration of the Kingdom work during the past two years bears this out. (w1985 3 /1 21)

> …at the brink of that final plunge. (w1986 12/15 13)

BRITAIN

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Britain and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	61,900	875		
1975	78,700	693		
1980	82,600	664	163,200	336
1985	103,500	531	193,900	284
1990	120,600	463	222,800	251
1995	132,400	432	224,500	255
2000	126,300	468	215,600	274
2005	127,200	459	215,100	271
2010	134,300	448	222,800	270
2015	137,600	457	225,600	279
2018	139,800	460	221,200	291
	Ave.			
2019	137,000	478	222,000	295
2020	130,900	496	211,200	307
2021	137,200	476	248,800	262
2022	139,100	474	220,400	290
2023	140,100	474	224,700	295
2024	143,000	484	229,300	302

2025	143,300	472	223,423	303

Average number of hours of preaching needed in Britain to convert and baptize one person:

	Baptized	Total Hours	Hours/ Baptism
1970	5,273	11,800,000	2,238
1975	7,850	12,900,000	1,643
1985	5,280	13,394,000	2,537
1990	6,014	18,394,000	3,484
1995	4,546	23,305,000	3,875
2000	2,731	22,993,000	5,058
2005	2,435	18,484,000	5,768
2010	2,611	17,997,000	7,391
2011	2,739	21,124,000	8,091
2012	2,556	22,623,000	8,260
2013	2,539	22,603,000	8,843
2015	2,286	23,215,000	9,143
2016	2,309	24,867,000	10,878
2017	2,216	24,824,000	10,751
2018	2,293		
2025	2,372		

In 2018 the WTS ceased to reveal the total hours of preaching per country per year. Notice the decrease in baptisms after 1975 (when the Armageddon prediction failed) and 1995 (when the "Creator's promise" of a paradise-world within the life-time of people who experienced 1914 was cancelled).

Bible studies conducted by JWs in Britain:

	Studies		Studies
1970	44,222	2010	55,499
1975	38,209	2011	56,974
1985	49,368	2012	57,322
1990	57,235	2013	58,018
1995	57,386	2015	60,066
2000	37,373		
2005	46,701	2025	42,112

And extract from the 2000 *Yearbook* of JWs:

> An extensive witness has been given in Britain. It got under way in 1881 when hundreds of thousands of Bible tracts were distributed in the principal cities during a period of just a few weeks. Some of the seeds sown then began to bear fruit. In a six-month period in 1914, the "Photo-Drama of Creation" was exhibited in 98 cities to a total audience of 1,226,650. When World War I broke out, there were 182 congregations in Britain. During the 1920's and 1930's, the witness was intensified as increased numbers of those associated with the congregations shared in the house-to-house ministry, giving a personal witness to householders. Since World War II, a further 650,746,716 hours have been devoted to the ministry in Britain, 297,294,732 return visits have been made on interested people, and 74,105,130 books and booklets in addition to 567,471,431 magazines have been placed with the public. On an average, Jehovah's Witnesses in Britain call on people in their homes two to three times a year...
>
> In 1891 as C.T. Russell viewed the British field, he saw it as being "ready and waiting to be harvested." The harvesting that is being done during the conclusion of this system of things is obviously near its end. And what a magnificent harvest it is proving to be! In the year 1900, there were just 138 Bible Students (as Jehovah's Witnesses were then known), mostly spirit-anointed Christians, in Britain. Now the number is 910 times that. (pp 146-147)

BROCHURES

Brochures are magazine-size publications, usually 32 pages, on particular topics with simplified explanations and colourful pictures:

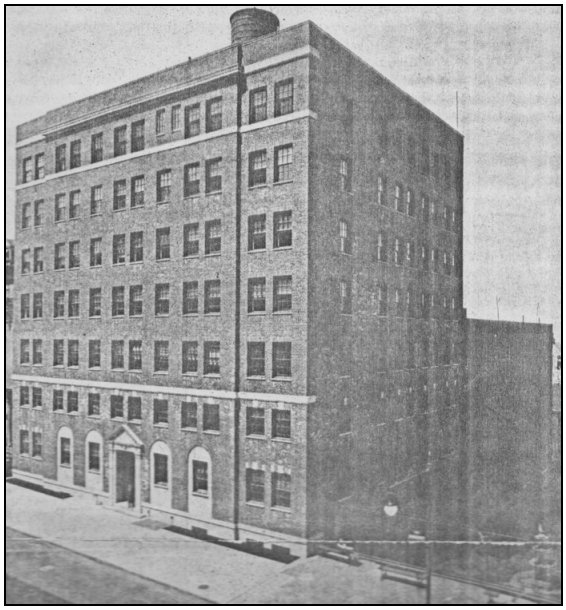
- Enjoy Life on Earth Forever! (1982)
- School and Jehovah's Witnesses (1983)
- Centennial of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania 1884-1984 (1984)
- The Divine Name That Will Endure Forever (1984)
- Jehovah's Witnesses—Unitedly Doing God's Will Worldwide (1986)
- "Look! Am Making All Things New" (1986)
- Jehovah's Witnesses in the Twentieth Century (1989)
- Should You Believe in the Trinity? (1989)
- How Can Blood Save Your Life? (1990)
- Our Problems—Who Will Help Us Solve them? (1990)
- Will There Ever Be a World Without War? (1992)
- The Government That Will Bring Paradise (1993)
- What is the Purpose of Life? How Can You Find It? (1993)
- Why Should We Worship God in Love and Truth? (1993)
- Lasting Peace and Happiness—How to Find Them (1996)
- What Does God Require of Us? (1996)
- A Book for All People (1997)
- What Happens to Us When We Die? (1998)
- Why Should We Worship God in Love and Truth? (1998)

- The Guidance of God—Our Way to Paradise (1999)
- You Can Be God's Friend (2000)
- Jehovah's Witnesses in the Twentieth Century (2000)
- A Satisfying Life—How to Attain It (2001)
- Does God Really Care About Us? (2001)
- Jehovah's Witnesses and Education (2002)
- The Road to Everlasting Life—Have You Found It? (2002)
- "See The Good Land" (2003)
- Keep on the Watch! (2004)
- Spirits of the Dead—Can They Help You or Harm You? Do They really Exist? (2005)
- When Someone You Love Dies (2005)
- Lasting Peace and Happiness—How to Find Them (2009)
- Real Faith—Your Key to a Happy Life (2010)
- The Origin of Life—Five Questions Worth Asking (2010)
- Was Life Created (2010)
- The Pathway to Peace and Happiness (2010)
- Listen to God and Live Forever (2011)
- Listen to God and Live Forever (2013)
- Good News From God! (2012)
- How Can You Have a Happy Life? (2013)
- My Bible Lessons (2013)
- Teach Your Children (2014)
- Who Are Doing Jehovah's Will Today? (2014)
- Your Family Can Be Happy (2014)
- Return to Jehovah (2015)

BROENER, TABITA

The real life person portrayed in the Danish movie *Worlds Apart* (2008). The movie is about a 17-year old JW girl who leaves the sect and is shunned. After leaving the JWs Broener became a teacher
[https://www.folkeskolen.dk/518902/folkeskolen-rummede-mig-som-jehovahs-vidne]
(See also: *WORLDS APART*)]

BROOKLYN BETHEL — 1920s



124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn in 1928

The seven-story building, with two further floors below street level, at 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York, was the "Bethel Home, containing the Executive Offices and living quarters of the [Bethel] family." (The Messenger, July 31, 1928, p.3)

This was "the official headquarters" of the Watchtower cult in the 1920s where 180 live-in volunteers were kept busy from 6.30 am to 10.30 pm. Rutherford inhabited the top (7th) floor.

The building was on a cliff crest and faced east and was known as the "new building". It was connected to the "old building" behind it which went down six floors below the cliff top.

The dining room, on the bottom floor, had five long tables each seating 36 persons. Everyone had an assigned seat. A photo in *The Messenger* shows Rutherford and Van Amburgh at the head of two of the tables.

The two buildings had 75 and 40 bedrooms.
(See: *BETHEL LIFE IN THE 1920s to 1950s*)

BROOKLYN DAILY EAGLE

A New York newspaper that published a number of critiques of C.T. Russell. (e.g. 1912 February 19; 1913 January 1, 11, 22, 23, 25, 27, 28, 29; 1916 November 1)

The following is from 1911, December 26:

GIVING UP THEIR HOMES FOLLOWING RUSSELLISM

The Eagle has received the following letters of comment upon "Pastor" Russell and his activities—one of them from a

former Russellite in England, who tells of the "pastor's" propaganda there:

25 Fairland Road, Stratford, London, England
"Editor Brooklyn Daily Eagle:
"I learn with considerable interest of the articles your paper is publishing relative to the notorious Pastor Russell, late of Allegheny, Pa., and now of Brooklyn. I have not had the pleasure of reading your strictures, but should very much like to do so, as would very many more in this country. Will you kindly send me all that you have published on this matter and keep me posted with the accounts of the coming action for slander that I have been told Mr. Russell has lodged against you?
"Mr. Russell has a pretty good following in this country, but numbers have left him owing to his extraordinary and insane teaching that he and his followers are dying in behalf of the world. That of course means that he is dying for the editor of The Eagle too!
"He has also deluded thousands of followers into believing that Christ returned to this earth in 1874, though in a spirit body and therefore invisible to the natural eye. Very many have gone so far as to sell their homes over here, expecting to die before 1914 (at the latest), and many others have so arranged their affairs as to last till that date only.
"I myself was connected with his movement for twelve years, but my eyes, thank God, are now opened.
"When one leaves their society because of enlightenment, Mr. Russell at once advises his followers to shun such an one and counsels his followers never to read anything emanating from any other source but his own pen!
"I could write to you for a week telling of the bitterness and sorrow that this man Russell has left in many a Christian home here in England. With best wishes for your success in your fight against hypocrisy and humbug."
"A. .G. BULL"

The Rev. John G. Briggs, pastor of the First Baptist Church of Owatonna, Minn., writes under the date of December 11, 1911:

"Editor Brooklyn Daily Eagle:
"The articles in The Brooklyn Daily Eagle concerning C.T. Russell of last Monday and a few weeks before are bound to do good. Whether he is self deceived or not, his works, to say nothing of his preaching, only bring confusion, rather than light and moral and spiritual strength, wherever I have seen them. In ten cases of which I know in our city the past year his works have brought first confusion and later disgust. For seven years I lived next to Dr. Dowie's colony. Save us from more such leaders. Mr. Russell is evidently pursuing similar tactics. Surely, P. T. Barnum's maxim still holds.
"JOHN G. BRIGGS"

BROOKLYN TABERNACLE
Formerly the "Plymouth Bethel" which the WBTS purchased in 1908 for the location of its new offices in New York City.

BROOKLYN, NEW YORK
The former location (until 2017) of the JWs world headquarters including offices and printing factories. The chief mailing address was: 117 Adams Street, Brooklyn, New York, 11201.

BROOKLYN WTS PROPERTIES — EXPANSION/PURCHASES
By 2000 CE the WTS owned 37 properties including 30 buildings in Brooklyn, New York, occupying major sections of four city blocks.

The market value in the 1990s was estimated at US$190 million. (Cohn 1995) The residential facilities housed 3500 JWs volunteers.

Major additions to the WTS's assets in New York City included the following:

- 1908 WBTS headquarters was moved from Pittsburgh to Brooklyn with the purchase of a mission building and its parsonage at 13-17 Hicks Street and 122-124 Columbia Heights.
- 1909 January 1 WBTS" new headquarters at 122-124 Columbia Heights dedicated.
- 1909/1911 Residential facilities expanded to 126 Columbia Heights.
- 1920 Factory at 18 Concord Street where the WTS Society until 1927 printed its books.
- 1926-1927 New factory constructed; activities moved from the previous factory at 18 Concord Street to 117 Adams Street.
  80-room residential facility constructed next to 124 Columbia Heights
- 1949 Nine-story addition doubled the printery size

- 1956 New building at 77 Sands Street doubles the printing facilities

- 1926 to 1976 The factory complex expanded to four city blocks from 70,000 square feet to nearly 700,000 square feet.
  The residential areas expanded to accommodate over 2000 workers.

- 1969 Former Squibb Buildings at 25 and 30 Columbia Heights purchased for extra storage space.
  25 Columbia Heights housed the international headquarters of JWs. 30 Columbia Heights had offices.

- 1975 Hotel at 8-10 Clark street purchased

- Late 1970s Graphics and Data Processing Department established. Letter presses replaced by high-speed rotary offset equipment. 117 Adams Street.

- Late 1970s to early 1980s. Central office and administrative complex established through conversion and redevelopment and included a 130-car garage.

- 1981 Standish Hotel, 171 Columbia Heights, acquired by JWs and used to accommodate part of their volunteer work force. Sold in 2005 for $50 million.

- 1983 Factory building at 175 Pearl Street/Sand Street purchased for printing and binding operations. A bridge completed in 1986 connected this building to four other factory buildings across the street.

- 1983 An immense building at 360 Furman Street, Brooklyn, across the harbour from the Wall Street financial district, purchased to function as the Shipping Department and literature supply room, but also contained the Carpenter Shop, Braille Department, Cassette Tape Duplicating Department, and recording studios. (g1987 8/22 16-18)

- 1986 Purchase of additional housing at 76 Willow Street and 183 Columbia Heights.

- 1986 A large building at 160 Jay Street purchased; situated next to the 175-Pearl-Street building. These two buildings were part of a six-building complex (located between the approaches to the Brooklyn and Manhattan bridges) which constituted the main printery of JWs. (g1987 12/22 16-18)

- 1987 Another building purchased — 97 Columbia Heights.

- 1988 Bossert Hotel purchased — 98 Montague Street. Sold in 2012 for $81 million.

- 1988-1989 Residences purchased at 105 Willow Street, 108 Joralemon Street, 89 Hicks Street, and 67 Livingston Street.

- Late 1980s to early 1990s Acquisition of 85 Jay Street; at three acres the "largest plot of undeveloped land in the city". Used as a parking lot and sold in 2016 for $345 million.
- 1992 Hotel in Sand Street, 29 stories high, sold in 2017 for $117 million.

  [https://thebridgebk.com/huge-new-buildings-will-change-the-face-dumbo/

From 2004 to 2019 the WTS sold all its Brooklyn properties and relocated its headquarters to areas north of New York City.

A WTS news release said:

> On December 12, 2018, Jehovah's Witnesses sold their last remaining property at their former Brooklyn headquarters, One York Street, also known as 30 Front Street... Since 2004, the Witnesses have sold 37 of their properties in Brooklyn.
> After purchasing the York Street site in 1977, the Witnesses used it as a parking lot for personnel who worked at their former headquarters....

On December 21, 2018 Anna Quinn reported:

> DUMBO, BROOKLYN — The Jehovah's Witnesses have officially moved out of Brooklyn — or at least their headquarters have. The religious group announced that they sold the last remaining piece of their former Dumbo headquarters last week.
> The last piece of property, found at 30 Front Street, was sold to development group Fortis Dumbo Acquisition. Fortis paid a whopping $91 million for the site, property records show.
> It was once used as a parking lot for the organization's staff.
> [https:/patch.com/new-york/heights-dumbo/jehovahs-witnesses-sell-last-piece-former-brooklyn-headquarters]

Apparently there was one more property (at 1128 Saint Johns Place). A report in May 2019 was titled "Witnesses jettisons Brooklyn development site for $2.45 million".

[https://www.bizjournals.com/newyork/news/2019/05/16/jehovahs-witnesses-jettisons-brooklyn-development]

BROTHERHOOD
JWs speak of their "worldwide brotherhood" with its "genuine friendships", "real love" and "loving concern".

Outwardly this is what observers see. The "real love", however, changes when individuals question the errors and cover-ups of the leaders. Such individuals are disfellowshipped and shunned and "love" and "concern" for them aborted. JWs who know the history and false predictions of their religion but want to retain their "genuine friendships" must do so by silence and complicity.

(See: *APOSTATES; CONTROL; JOY*)

BROTHERS
"Brothers" are baptized JWs males. "Brothers" supplanted the term "brethren" in 1950 with the first release of the New World Translation. "Brothers" was also used of mixed male-female groups of JWs before the phrase "brothers and sisters" became common.

BROTHERS OF CHRIST
The 144,000 who are destined to go to Heaven and rule Earth as "kings" from there.

Those of this group currently still living on Earth are the "remnant". They are also the only JWs who partake of the bread and wine at the annual "memorial" of Christ's death.

Their increase to about 52,000 by 1935 threatened to refute the doctrine that only 144,000 will rule with Christ in heaven and all 20th-century members are WTS supporters. This was a reason for the new interpretations that the harvest of the remnant stopped in 1935 and the "great crowd" now had to be harvested and join JWs.

For about 70 years after 1935 the remnant decreased year after year because of the doctrine that all of them had been selected by 1935 and newcomers can only be added to replace the few who apostatized.

The "brothers of Christ" or remnant were also known as the "faithful and discreet slave class" until about 2012 when the Governing Body reserved this designation for themselves, in effect demoting all the others.

For decades commentators considered the decreasing numbers of the remnant a doctrinal "time bomb" because of the doctrine that Governing Body members had to come from this group. It implied the eventual extinction of the Governing Body.

However, since 2005 CE the "remnant" has been allowed to increase. But this is another doctrinal time bomb. The 144,000 "brothers of Christ" were selected from Pentecost 33 CE onwards and are a literal number. With 52,000 in 1935 and now again increasing, the doctrine that only a literal number of 144,000 go to heaven again faces refutation. Probably more "new light" is therefore pending.

Memorial attendance and partakers since 2005

2005	16,383,000	8,524
2006	16,675,000	8,758
2008	17,791,000	9,986
2010	18,707,000	11,202
2012	19,013,000	12,604
2014	19,950,000	14,121
2016	20,085,000	18,013
2017	20,175,000	18,564
2018	20,329,000	19,521
2019	20,919,000	20,526
2020	17,845,000	21,182
2021	21,367,603	20,746
2022	19,722,000	21,150
2023	20,462,000	----------
2024	21,119,000	
2025	20,635,000	24,576

See also: *REMNANT; 144,000*; MEMORIAL PARTAKERS

BROWN, Claude
West Indian immigrant to Canada who converted to Russellism during World War I. Claude went to Sierra Leone as colporteur in 1923 and preached in various West African countries including Gold Coast (Ghana) and Nigeria in 1924-25, and Liberia 1926.

BROWN, J.A. (1781-1842)
John Aquila Brown is the apparent originator (in 1823) of the idea that the Gentile Times are a period of 2520 years. Brown's calculation extended the Gentile Times from 604 BCE to 1917 CE. (Jonsson, 1983)

In 1875 N.H. Barbour altered the period to 606 BCE to 1914 CE which C.T. Russell accepted.

JWs, in *Equipped for Every Good Work* (1946) altered 606 BCE to 607 CE. By deleting the year "0" from the calculation the 1914 endpoint could be retained.

Several Pentecostal sects, such as the Christian Revival Crusade in Australia, calculated 1917 for the end of 2520 years. In 1917 occurred the Balfour Declaration (that Britain would support a Jewish national home in Palestine).

J.A Brown wrote *Even-Tide* (1823) and *The Jew: The Master-Kay of the Apocalypse* (1827). He married Ann Eliza Truss in 1805 and had six children.

BROWN, W.R. (1879-1967)
W.R. Brown was a native colporteur for the WBTS in Trinidad in 1910 and Dominica in 1915.

Brown married in 1920, colporteured on various Caribbean Islands, and in 1923 was sent by Rutherford to West Africa. He was stationed mainly in Nigeria but preached also in Sierra Leone (1923), Liberia (1926 & 1929), and Cameroon, and toured the Gold Coast (Ghana) in 1935, 1947 and 1960.

Brown settled in Nigeria in 1931 and opened a WTS branch office and returned to the Caribbean in 1960. (Yearbooks 1961, 260; 1973, 149-150, 166-167, 185; 1977, 140; 1979, 174-175; w1967 3/15 190; w1971 1/1 12)

BULGARIA
Publishers and Memorial attendance in Bulgaria and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1995	655	12,977	1,825	4,657
2000	1,135	7,338	2,695	3,090
2005	1,500	5,286	3,687	2,151
2010	1,797	4,229	3,914	1,942
2015	2,368	3,076	5,267	1,383
2018	2,530	2,781	5,424	1,297
	Ave.			
2019	2,524	2,733	5,444	1,286
2020	2,563	2,712	5,608	1,239
2021	2,637	2,615	7,386	934
2022	2,676	2,558	5,958	1,149
2023	2,780	2,443	6,181	1,099
2024	2,897	2,226	6,475	999
2025	2,991	2,152	6,371	1,010

BULLETIN, THE
An instruction sheet for colporteurs — Russellites who sold Russell's books to the public — first issued in 1917. It continued as *The Director* (1935-1936), *The Informant* (1936-1957), and *Kingdom Ministry* (1957-1975), *Our Kingdom Service* (1976-1981), and *Our Kingdom Ministry* (1982-present).

BULLETIN BOARD
Kingdom Halls have an "Information Board" for official notices not a "Bulletin Board" because the Governing Body derives "Bulletin Board" from "Papal Bull" and wants no connection with so-called "false religion" even in terminology employed.

BURKINA FASO
A land-locked country in West Africa formerly named Upper Volta, renamed in 1984.

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Burkina Faso and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	3	1,652,000		
1975	44	119,500		
1980	151	40,700	691	8,896
1985	268	27,309	1,123	6,517
1990	449	16,300	1,543	4,743
1995	689	12,977	1,825	4,899
2000	1,009	10,260	2,965	3,492
2005	1,145	10,657	3,617	3,374
2010	1,495	10,522	4,646	3,386
2015	1,743	10,388	4,499	4,025
2018	1,958	10,088	4,309	4,584
	Ave.			
2019	1,801	11,283	4,851	4,189
2020	1,684	12,413	3,601	5,805
2021	1,701	12,638	4,528	4,748
2022	1,725	12,813	4,251	5,199
2023	1,822	12,470	4,462	5,092
2024	1,920	12,417	4,984	4,783
2025	1,993	12,080	4,675	5,150

BURRIDGE, J.H.
Author of the 32-page booklet *Pastor Russell's Teaching on The Coming of Christ* (1912). The booklet begins with: "Of all the theories extant concerning the coming of our adorable Lord, that of "Pastor" Russell is the most anti-scriptural and absurd."

Burridge refutes the invisible second coming of 1874 as "perversion of God's word", and exposes as pompous nonsense Russell's claim that his cult alone is true Christianity.

Strongly rejected is Russell's argument (in *The Time Is at Hand*) that God hid the correct understanding of Christ's return by including apparent contradictions in the Bible which, "have for centuries served the Divine purpose of concealing the truth." (pp 15-17)

Burridge says:

> We trust the faithfulness of our God in the plain and simple statements of His word, but abhor Russell's wicked perversion of them under the pretence of a special mission to unfold what hitherto has been concealed. (p.17)

Burridge also rejected Russell's prophecies for 1914:

> We most emphatically answer that not one of the passages he [Russell] quotes, nor in the whole of the Word of God, favors his view that the Lord has come, is present, and will set up His kingdom in 1914, in which year, says Russell, and for this purpose, the governments of all nations are to be destroyed;—for that date, we are told, is "the farthest limit" of their existence. (p.18)

Burridge was right and Russell wrong despite the WTS's much-repeated boast that Russell was right and promoted "the truth".

BURUNDI

Publishers and Memorial attendance in Burundi and their ratio to the population:

	Peak	Ratio 1 to	Memorial	Ratio 1 to
1970	46	71,174		
1975	125	30,800		
1980	175	22,857	461	8,677
1985	382	12,304	1,092	3,605
1995	1,575	4,063	4,741	1,350
2000	3,420	1,959	12,211	549
2005	6,026	1,278	18,982	406
2010	9,840	818	37,700	214
2015	13,132	703	50,700	182
2018	14,508	671	50,700	192
	Ave.			
2019	14,734	783	61,200	189
2020	15,276	778	47,900	248
2021	15,750	778	40,600	302
2022	16,460	767	53,100	238
2023	17,351	749	65,540	198
2024	18,729	713	77,037	173
2025	20,666	658	81,345	167

BUSSELMAN, G.

In the 1980s and 1990s hundreds of former JWs started anti-cult ministries and/or told their story in newspapers, pamphlets and magazines.

Gary Busselman left JWs in 1974/1975 and in 1996 began seeking out other ex-JWs via newspaper ads and a telephone answering machine. He distributed many self-published pamphlets including *The Godly Quality of Hate, Shunning,* and *My Story*:

My Story: Gary Busselman

When my father, a second generation Jehovah's Witness baptized in 1935, decided to "do something about the truth," about 1951. I was seven years old and we were living in a very small (about 20'x24') tar-paper shack, divided up into four rooms with blankets for doors on a acreage outside of Sioux Falls, SD, without running water and for a time without electricity. Our heat was a fuel oil space heater, used at night and for back-up, in the front room (the one with no beds), and in the kitchen, a cob burner, with a whistling tea kettle, that was kept going all day every day all winter. Our bathroom was an out-house and a washtub in front of the stove with pan heated hot water.

My dad worked in a lumber mill and my mother washed clothes with a scrub board and Maytag washer on the porch, made garden, canned, cooked and did her best to care for my one brother and I.

My first grade year in Whipple District was my last good year for many, many years to come. Whipple was a rural school. All eight grades in one room with a hand pump well and out-houses. One teacher, different most every year. My class was me and Rose. There was one other boy in school, Martin Green, until Roger, my brother, started in '52.

I often walked to school and the Dakota wind blew cold, but not as cold as what was coming. The beatings started. The yelling started. I was a shy and scared little kid in 1951 when I went to school with a note for the teacher about why I couldn't do the same things I had done the year before. When Christmas came I sat at my desk and cried with the note from mom to the teacher in my pocket. The stress put on me was too much for me to handle, I started to stutter, I bit my fingernails, I wet the bed, I lost all interest in school and did poorly from then on. The beatings continued.

The Jehovah's Witnesses meetings were held in abandoned store-fronts and apocalyptic thinking ran high and just flowed from the publications and the lips of the local members. I was praised when my looks and behavior mirrored the group leaders and shamed and beaten, poked and pinched, when I acted like a kid. The leader of the group was a round bellied short man named Martin Anderson who could speak like Joe Rutherford.

When I was in grade school I was told that

school was not important, that in the new world everybody would be perfect, smart, and good looking automatically and that I wouldn't have to ever worry about going to high school. The beatings continued. In 1958 I went with my parents, my brother and my aunt and uncle in dad's 1953 Chevy 4 door to the New York assembly. That fall I started high school. In high school the Witnesses told me that I would never have to worry about after high school, getting married, or having kids in this old world. I still stuttered, wet the bed, and bit my finger nails. When in high school, the folks took me to a doctor to find out why I was so "nervous". He prescribed a new drug ... valium. I was on it (and out of it) for the next year and a half. In 1960 I was 16. I looked up a JW friend a year older than me and he handed me a beer. I picked it up ... and set it back down in ...1991.

After high school I got a job in a bakery and bought a 1948 Harley Davidson motorcycle.

In 1967 I married Delores Osborn. She had been a pioneer...a Jehovah's Witness like me. We lived in an 8'x40' trailer. She had leukemia. Blood products and organ transplants were not an option for her. She suffered terribly and died in January 1971 believing that she was a martyr for the "truth". She was fun, smart, interesting, and loyal to the "truth" to the death. About the only thing left of the "truth" that she died for is the blood transfusion ban that she suffered because of. She wouldn't even consider an organ transplant (bone marrow, now allowed) that doctors said would give her a 50% chance of recovery because in 1967 the Society brought out "new light" that all transplants are cannibalism.

In September of 1971 I married Nancy Kittleson. Nancy was a Jehovah's Witness. We had 4 babies, Brice, Layne. Brady, and Brook. All still living as I write this. Brice and Layne are Witnesses. Brook and Brady never were.

My last Watchtower straw was in 1974 after seeing the Society building spiritual escape routes and back doors relating to their soon to fail 1975 prophecy. I was reprimanded for not wearing a necktie to the Kingdom Hall one Sunday when I was microphone delivery boy during Watchtower study. I had my suit and white shirt and shined shoes but no tie, i.e. incomplete costume. I quietly retreated to the custom cabinet business I had just entered into with my dad, drank myself to sleep at night, and waited for Armageddon to come, and waited, and waited, and drank, and waited. I bought my dad out in 1983 and waited, and waited.

In 1991 I looked up one day and found myself in an alcohol treatment center in Sioux City, Iowa. The treatment people thought that Jehovah's Witnesses might have something to do with my self-destructive behavior but I didn't see any connection. In 1992 I was surprised to discover that I was still clean and sober and while in a Christian book store waiting for a clerk I picked up a book on cults off the shelf and was shocked to find Jehovah's Witnesses listed. I looked in all the books on cults they had and JWs were in every one so I went to the library and found the same thing in other cult books. This led me to books by David Reed and Ray Franz.

Nancy was still a practicing member and I would throw all the things I was learning at her and the marriage was getting worse and worse. In 1993 we separated and started divorce proceedings. As a last resort we decided to try counselling with a guy, who is a Ph.D. psychologist who also had been through seminary, because he had a good reputation for helping recovering alcoholics with living problems—and I sure had one. He recognized the cult issue as the primary problem and helped us to work out an agreement for a reconciliation. I would accept her JW involvement if she would limit meetings to 1 hour Sundays, and the book study Tuesday night. He recommended a date night and I picked Thursday. We did this for about a year, back to living together and getting along fair.

In January 1995, Layne, our second oldest son, a JW, about 20 at the time, left a suicide note and didn't come home one night. We found him out in "service" and had him hospitalized for evaluation. This was a low point for me, and a crisis for sure. At that point I hadn't had any contact with any former Witnesses other than one friend I have who just happened to be an ex-JW. I decided to make a few phone calls to see just what the heck is going on with this group. I made some good calls to Diane, Joan, Jan, Jerry, Duane, and Randy and talked to some really caring people. Within days my mailbox was loaded every day. I decided to try listening for a change. One guy I listened to was Dr. Jerry Bergman. That was a good move for me. The next guy I listened to was Randy Watters. That was a good move too. Randy started sending me stuff, different than I had seen before, tapes.

The first set was audio tapes of a couple with a hidden microphone being disfellowshipped by these elders. Nancy wouldn't sit and listen but she did clean the bathroom vanity top in the next room while I listened to the tape. Something changed with her. Randy sent another tape. This one a video about a girl being disfellowshipped by elders, one of them her uncle. Nancy watched that one—she

hasn't been to a meeting since. This was all within 2 weeks of my first call to former Witnesses. I write this March 30 of 1996 and I've never been happier. My marriage is great. I have a family now, Nancy, Brady, and Brook. I had to define "family" and "relatives."

Since '91 I've been back on motorcycles. Nancy and I ride double and we are trying to wear out our third Goldwing. We travel far and have a pop up camper made by a friend that we sleep in when it makes sense. Things that we would like to do, we do. We have been up the west coast highway from Morrow Bay, CA. to Port Angeles, WA, rode the Highway to the Sun, the Blue Ridge Parkway, the Natches Trace Parkway, and all over the Midwest. I have a small wood hobby shop where I do small projects for fun. I play guitar—sort of. Currently I play at working at a small machine business that I kept when I sold the Millwork business in 1992, research and write, enjoy my family and many friends.

BYINGTON, Steven T. (1869-1957)
American individualist, anarchist, intellectual, master of 12 languages, and translator of *The Bible in Living English* (1972), which has "Jehovah" in the Old Testament, published by the WBTS.

REFERENCES

Bale, Christian C.P.
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christian_Bale

Beckford, James A.
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_A._Beckford

Bell, J.D. Jehovah's Witness Wins New Trial in Blood Transfusion Case South Carolina high court opinion is in line with precedent in other states, *The National Law Journal*, July 23, 2002

Bergman, J. 1984 *Jehovah's Witnesses and Kindred Groups A Historical Compendium and Bibliography*, Garland Publishing

Bergman, J. *JW Research Journal* Volume 4 No. 3, 1997, pp 9, 10, 13)

Bergman, J. 1999 *Jehovah's Witnesses: A Comprehensive and Selectively Annotated Bibliography*, Greenwood Press

Best, J. c.1933 *"Big Business" In Religion*, Baxter & Stubbs, Australia

Blizzard, P.
www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/fred_franz.htm

Carter, C. 2014 *Mail Online*, December 8, 2014
www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2865363/High-Court-judge-High-Court-judge-forces-devout-Jehovahs-Witness-parents-let-badly-burned-son-blood-transfusion.html

Cohn, W. Taxes Not paid by Witnesses Cost City $10 Million a Year, *Brooklyn Heights Press & Cobble Hill News*, June 1, 1995

Court Transcript: *Watchtower Attorney Olin R. Moyle Sues Watchtower President Joseph F. Rutherford And Wins!* New York Supreme Court, pp 58, 1259-1327, 1364-1406

Eburn, M. 1999 *Emergency Law*, Federation Press, 31-35

Eddie, L. Simulacra: It's All In The Eye Of The Beholder! *Investigator* No. 50, September 1996

Gaustad, E.S. 1978 *The Rise of Adventism*, Harper and Row, USA, 168-177

Investigator Magazine "Beth Sarim", #95, 2004 March

Investigator Magazine "Beth Shan — House of Security", #61, July 1998

Investigator Magazine "Boastful Lies", #72, May 2000

Investigator Magazine "Joseph Booth: An African Legend", #37, July 1994

Investigator Magazine "Lloyd Barry", #134, September 2010

Jonsson, C.O. 1983 (Second edition 1986) *The Gentile Times Reconsidered*, Commentary Press

Louderback-Wood, K. Jehovah's Witnesses, Blood Transfusion and the Tort of Misrepresentation, *Journal of Church and State* (Baylor University), December 13, 2005.
jwfacts.com/pdf/blood-misrepresented-2005-kerry-louderback-wood-pdf

Louderback-Wood, K.
www.baylor.edu/church_state/index.php?id=35404

Macmillan, A.H. 1957 *Faith on The March*, Prentice-Hall

Oder, N.
https://thebridgebk.com/huge-new-buildings-will-change-the-face-dumbo/

Painter, A.
5KA and 5AU closed down
www.sahistorians.org.au/175/chronology/january/8-january-1941-5ka-and-5au-closed-down.shtml

Penton, M. James 1988 *Apocalypse Delayed*, University of Toronto Press

Persian, J. 'A National Nuisance': The Banning of Jehovah's Witnesses in Australia in 1941
www.academia.edu/170817/A_National_Nuisance_The_Banning_of_Jehovahs_Witnesses_in_Australia_in_1941

Schmitz, C. *The Lawyers Weekly* (Canada), September 14, 2007
www.lawyersweekly.ca/index.php?section=article&articleid=536

Schnell, W. 1971 *30 Years A Watchtower Slave*, Baker Book House, p.47

Service Year Reports of JWs Worldwide [since 2017] https://jw.org/

Singla, A.K., Lapinski, R.H., Berkowitz, R.L., Saphier, C.J. Are women who are Jehovah's Witnesses at risk of maternal death? *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynaecology* October 2001, Volume 185, Issue 4, Pages 893–895

Sugarman, B. (K.C.) Editor, 1943 Commonwealth Law Reports 67, Adelaide Company of Jehovah's Witnesses Incorporated [Plaintiff] And The Commonwealth [Defendant], The Law Book Company of Australia, Pty. Ltd.

University of Maryland Medical Center 2016
http://umm.edu/programs/cancer/services/bloodmarrow/transplant/allogeneic.htm

Vachani, C. Allogeneic Transplant (Bone Marrow & Stem Cell), April 4, 2016
www.oncolink.org/cancer-treatment/bone-marrow-transplants/allogeneic-transplant-bone-marrow-stem-cell.htm

Van Wolfswinkel M.E., Zwart J.J., Schutte J.M. et al. Maternal mortality and serious maternal morbidity in Jehovah's witnesses in the Netherlands. BJOG: An International Journal of Obstetrics and Gynaecology, 2009, Volume 116 (8), 1103–1110

Varela, J.E., Gomez-Marin, O, Fleming, L.E. Cohn, S.M. The Risk of Death for Jehovah's Witnesses after Major Trauma*, The Journal of Trauma: Injury, Infection, and Critical Care,* May 2003, Volume 54 (5), 967-972.
www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1377670/pdf/jmedeth00315-0009.pdf

Wheeler, R. 2014
https://www.uhs.nhs.uk/HealthProfessionals/Clinical-law-updates/Adults-who-refuse-blood-transfusion-in-emergency-circumstances.aspx

Wilson, P**.** Jehovah's Witness children: when religion and the law collide, *Paediatric Nursing*. April 2005, Volume 17, Issue 3, pages 34–37

Yearbook of Jehovah's Witnesses (various dates) WBTS

Zeybek, B. el al, Management of the Jehovah's Witness in Obstetrics and Gynecology: A Comprehensive Medical, Ethical, and Legal Approach, *Obstetrical & Gynecological Survey.* August 2016: 71(8):488-500

Websites

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bible_translations

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gideons_International

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_A._Beckford

https://en.wikipedis.org/wiki/New-World-Translation-of-the-Holy-Scriptures

https://www.marsdens.net.au/about-us/latest-news/death-of-heather-winchester/

https://www.reddit.com/r/exjw/comments/1wlem0x/lets_remember_them_jehovahs_witnesses_who_died/

https://www.unitedbiblesocieties.og/record-number-of-bibles-distributed-by-bible-societies-in-2014/

www.aggelia.be/rutherford.html)

www.freeminds.org/bethel/bethelguest.htm

Home Page
https://jwdictionary.net